

IN THE MATTER OF AN ARBITRATION BEFORE A TRIBUNAL  
CONSTITUTED  
IN ACCORDANCE WITH THE TREATY BETWEEN THE U.S.A. AND THE  
REPUBLIC OF ECUADOR CONCERNING THE ENCOURAGEMENT AND  
RECIPROCAL PROTECTION OF INVESTMENT, SIGNED AUGUST 27, 1993  
(THE "TREATY")

and

THE UNCITRAL ARBITRATION RULES 1976

- - - - -X  
 In the Matter of Arbitration :  
 Between: :  
 :  
 CHEVRON CORPORATION (U.S.A.), :  
 TEXACO PETROLEUM COMPANY (U.S.A.), :  
 :  
 Claimants, : PCA Case No.  
 : 2009-23  
 and :  
 :  
 THE REPUBLIC OF ECUADOR, :  
 :  
 Respondent. :  
 - - - - -X Volume 1

TRACK 2 HEARING

Tuesday, April 21, 2015

The World Bank  
700 18th Street, N.W.  
J Building  
Conference Room JB1-080  
Washington, D.C. 20003

The Hearing in the above-entitled matter convened  
at 9:00 a.m. before:

MR. V.V. VEEDER, Q.C., President

DR. HORACIO GRIGERA NAÓN, Arbitrator

PROFESSOR VAUGHAN LOWE, Q.C., Arbitrator

## Registry, Permanent Court of Arbitration:

MR. MARTIN DOE, Secretary to the Tribunal  
 MR. RAYMUNDO TREVES  
 MS. NAYA PESSOA

## Additional Secretary:

MS. JESSICA WELLS

## Court Reporters:

MR. DAVID A. KASDAN  
 Registered Diplomate Reporter (RDR)  
 Certified Realtime Reporter (CRR)  
 Worldwide Reporting, LLP  
 529 14th Street, S.E.  
 Washington, D.C. 20003  
 United States of America  
 (202) 544-1903  
 info@wwreporting.com

SR. VIRGILIO DANTE RINALDI, S.H.  
 D.R. Esteno  
 Colombres 566  
 Buenos Aires 1218ABE  
 Argentina  
 (5411) 4957-0083  
 info@dresteno.com

## Interpreters:

MR. DANIEL GIGLIO  
 MS. SILVIA COLLA

## APPEARANCES: (Continued)

Representing Chevron Corporation and Texaco  
 Petroleum Company:

MR. HEWITT PATE  
 MR. MATTHEW FRIEDRICH  
 MR. JOSÉ LUIS MARTIN  
 MR. RICARDO REIS VEIGA  
 MS. SARA McMILLEN  
 MR. ANDRES ROMERO  
 MS. TANYA VALLI

## APPEARANCES:

## On behalf of the Claimants:

MR. R. DOAK BISHOP  
 MR. WADE CORIELL  
 MS. TRACIE RENFROE  
 MS. CAROL WOOD  
 MR. DAVID WEISS  
 MR. ELDY QUINTANILLA ROCHÉ  
 MS. ANISHA SUD  
 MS. SARA MCBREARTY  
 MS. JAMIE MILLER  
 MS. VIRGINIA CASTELAN  
 King & Spalding, LLP  
 110 Louisiana Street, Suite 3900  
 Houston, Texas 77002  
 United States of America

MR. EDWARD G. KEHOE  
 MS. CALINE MOUAWAD  
 MS. ISABEL FERNÁNDEZ de la CUESTA  
 MR. JOHN CALABRO  
 MS. JESSICA BEESS UND CHROSTIN  
 King & Spalding, LLP  
 1185 Avenue of the Americas  
 New York, New York 10036-4003  
 United States of America

MR. BRIAN A. WHITE  
 MS. ELIZABETH SILBERT  
 King & Spalding, LLP  
 1180 Peachtree Street  
 Atlanta, GA 30309  
 United States of America

MR. JAN PAULSSON  
 MR. LUKE A. SOBOTA  
 Three Crowns, LLP  
 2001 Pennsylvania Avenue, N.W.  
 Washington, D.C. 20005  
 United States of America

## APPEARANCES: (Continued)

## On behalf of the Respondent:

DR. DIEGO GARCÍA CARRIÓN,  
 Attorney General  
 DRA. BLANCA GÓMEZ del la TORRE  
 DR. FELIPE AGUILAR LUIS  
 DRA. DANIELA PALACIOS  
 DRA. MARÍA TERESA BORJA  
 Counsel, Attorney General's Office  
 Procuraduría General del Estado  
 Robles 731 y Av. Amazonas  
 Quito, Ecuador

MR. ERIC W. BLOOM  
 MR. TOMÁS LEONARD  
 MR. MARK BRAVIN  
 MS. NICOLE SILVER  
 MR. ALEX KAPLAN  
 MR. GREGORY EWING  
 MR. ERIC GOLDSTEIN  
 MS. CAROLINA ROMERO ACEVEDO  
 MS. CRISTINA VITERI TORRES  
 MS. CHRISTINE WARING  
 MR. JEFF JOHNSON  
 MR. ERIC WERLINGER  
 MR. PETER OSYF  
 MR. SCOTT PHILLIPS  
 MS. KATHY AMES VALDIVIESO  
 Winston & Strawn, LLP  
 1700 K Street, N.W.  
 Washington, D.C. 20006  
 United States of America

MR. RICARDO UGARTE  
 MS. NASSIM HOOSHMANDNIA  
 Winston & Strawn LLP  
 Grand-Rue 23  
 Geneva 1204  
 Switzerland

APPEARANCES: (Continued)

On behalf of the Respondent:

PROF. EDUARDO SILVA ROMERO  
PROF. PIERRE MAYER  
MR. JOSÉ MANUEL GARCÍA REPRESA  
MS. AUDREY CAMINADES  
MS. GABRIELA GONZÁLEZ GIRÁLDEZ  
Dechert LLP  
32 rue Monceau  
75008 Paris  
France

MR. ÁLVARO GALINDO CARDONA  
MR. DAVID ATTANASIO  
Dechert LLP  
1900 K Street, N.W.  
Washington, D.C. 20006  
United States of America

MR. BRIAN CUMMINS  
LitOptix

P R O C E E D I N G S

1  
2 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Good morning, ladies and  
3 gentlemen. This is the resumed Hearing in Phase II of the  
4 arbitration between Chevron Corporation and the Texaco  
5 Petroleum Company as Claimants and the Republic of Ecuador  
6 as the Respondent.

7 I think there's no need to renew old  
8 acquaintances, but we do welcome Dechert and Professor  
9 Mayer for the Respondent, and you will see on my extreme  
10 left Ms. Jessica Wells, the additional Secretary to the  
11 Tribunal.

12 Now, we thank the Parties for planning out the  
13 map of this Hearing; and, from that, we understand that  
14 today will be given over to the Parties' opening oral  
15 submissions, the Claimants in the morning, the Respondents  
16 in the afternoon, not to exceed more than four hours.

17 There are certain procedural matters which remain  
18 outstanding. We'd like those to be taken up, if you wish  
19 to, during your oral submissions rather than starting with  
20 the procedural disputes at the outset of this morning, but  
21 we would like to complete the submissions today and start  
22 with the Witness clean tomorrow morning.

23 There are two minor housekeeping matters. One is  
24 that we will need mid-morning breaks and mid-afternoon  
25 breaks for the shorthand writers and for the interpreters;

C O N T E N T S

	PAGE
PRELIMINARY MATTERS:	8
OPENING STATEMENTS	
ON BEHALF OF THE CLAIMANTS:	
By Mr. Pate	10
By Mr. Paulsson	13
By Mr. Bishop	24
By Mr. Coriell	94
By Ms. Renfroe	119
By Mr. Paulsson	141
ON BEHALF OF THE RESPONDENT:	
By Attorney General García Carrión	172
By Mr. Bloom	177
By Mr. Silva Romero	184
By Ms. Gómez de la Torre	197
By Professor Mayer	206
By Mr. Ugarte	223
By Mr. Bloom	241
By Mr. Leonard	242
By Mr. Ewing	271
By Ms. Silver	286
By Mr. Bloom	295
By Mr. Ewing	306
By Mr. Goldstein	319

09:01 1 and, as to that, we'd like to leave it to counsel when it  
2 least interrupts their submissions to decide when those  
3 breaks would be taken. They would be about 15 minutes or  
4 so.

5 If you speak very fast and the interpreters and  
6 shorthand writers get very tired, we may need two breaks,  
7 but again we'll come to that later.

8 And the second matter is, are there any  
9 housekeeping matters which require us to address them now  
10 at this stage before the Claimants start their opening  
11 oral submissions?

12 We ask the Claimants first.

13 MR. BISHOP: Mr. Chairman, there are obviously  
14 some procedural issues outstanding. We do not believe they  
15 need to be taken up today. We believe that they could be  
16 taken up tomorrow. We're not planning on making  
17 submissions on those as part of the Opening Statements, but  
18 we agree that we should not slow down the course of the day  
19 by taking those up.

20 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you very much.

21 And the Respondent?

22 MR. BLOOM: We agree that whatever procedural  
23 matters are pending probably are best left not for today.  
24 I think we're going to be having a very long day as it is.

25 PRESIDENT VEEDER: I think we're all concerned

09:02 1 about that. It will be inevitably a long day.  
 2 Without more, we give the floor to the Claimants.  
 3 And is that you, Mr. Pate?  
 4 MR. PATE: I think first the introduction from  
 5 Mr. Bishop.  
 6 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Mr. Bishop.  
 7 OPENING STATEMENT BY COUNSEL FOR CLAIMANTS  
 8 MR. BISHOP: Yes, thank you. Mr. Chairman, yes,  
 9 Mr. Pate, the General Counsel of Chevron will make a very  
 10 short statement at the beginning of our presentation, and  
 11 then Professor Paulsson will give our introduction, and  
 12 then I will make a presentation after that. That's the way  
 13 in which we will begin.  
 14 There will be a natural break, I think, around a  
 15 little over two hours into our presentation, maybe two  
 16 hours and ten minutes. If the Tribunal wishes to break  
 17 earlier, obviously we can, but I think that would be about  
 18 a natural break after my presentation.  
 19 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you.  
 20 MR. PATE: Thank you, Mr. President, Members of  
 21 the Tribunal.  
 22 This is my sixth opportunity to address you at  
 23 the outset of a tribunal proceeding, so I begin with a few  
 24 observations about where we have been and where we are  
 25 today.

09:03 1 When I first addressed you in 2010, the evidence  
 2 of the Cabrera fraud was just coming to light, and there  
 3 was hope that Ecuador would decide to end its allegiance  
 4 with Steven Donziger and his co-conspirators.  
 5 Remember: The Party line during that period even  
 6 as late as 2012 in Ecuador was that the Lago Agrio  
 7 Litigation was purely private and did not involve the  
 8 Government of Ecuador.  
 9 By today, however, we have the Foreign Minister of  
 10 Ecuador confirming on video that enforcement of a plainly  
 11 fraudulent judgment is a top foreign policy priority of the  
 12 nation. When I appeared before the Tribunal in 2012,  
 13 Chevron at least hoped that Ecuador would obey the lawful  
 14 Orders of this Tribunal, which ordered Ecuador, as you will  
 15 recall, to use all means "at its disposal" to prevent  
 16 enforcement of the fraudulent judgment, and then later, to  
 17 use "all means necessary" to do so. Ecuador flouted the  
 18 Tribunal's orders. It now even proclaims in advance that  
 19 it will not obey future Orders and attacks the Tribunal as  
 20 corrupt, saying in official Government publications that  
 21 this Tribunal issues "illegal rulings" that, "trample law  
 22 and justice."  
 23 For the next three weeks we will sit together with  
 24 civility and professionalism to review the ever-growing  
 25 mountain of evidence of fraud, bribery, and corruption that

09:05 1 has become the subject of a 500-page United States District  
 2 Court opinion, as well as the rulings of other courts. We  
 3 will revisit the forged Expert Reports, the bribes from the  
 4 self-described secret account, the cook and the waiter,  
 5 then the puppet and the puppeteer, the "go to jail" e-mail,  
 6 the Honey & Honey restaurant bribe meeting that even Steven  
 7 Donziger admits he attended, the typo-for-typo inclusion of  
 8 the Plaintiffs' private material in the sham judgment from  
 9 Lago Agrio, and, most importantly, the Government of  
 10 Ecuador's white-washing and endorsement of the whole sordid  
 11 scheme as national policy.  
 12 The vast bulk of the fraud evidence is  
 13 uncontested, and no serious alternative narrative will be  
 14 presented. What we will hear instead is Ecuador attacking  
 15 Chevron for doing what was necessary to expose the  
 16 corruption, but every time Ecuador does this, it proves  
 17 Chevron's case. Ecuador commits a denial of justice  
 18 through its stubborn failure to address the corruption  
 19 evidence that Chevron has exposed, and the unrepentant  
 20 words and actions of its highest officials put the lie to  
 21 its cynical arguments about the exhaustion of illusory  
 22 remedies.  
 23 There is no blinking that the outcome of these  
 24 proceedings will send a message to the international  
 25 investing business community and to host countries as well.

09:07 1 The message will be either that there is a right to justice  
 2 guaranteed by international law and made effective by  
 3 neutral tribunals or instead that, notwithstanding  
 4 overwhelming evidence that an official Government policy of  
 5 promoting a corrupt Judgment in defiance of lawful  
 6 international injunctions is beyond the power of  
 7 international law to redress.  
 8 Now, naturally, much care must be given when  
 9 assessing serious allegations against any sovereign, but if  
 10 the institutions charged with applying international law  
 11 cannot call what happened here by its name--a denial of  
 12 justice--an outcome entitled to no international effect,  
 13 then it would be difficult to see that investor-State  
 14 arbitration serves any purpose.  
 15 And with that, may I ask that the Tribunal invite  
 16 Mr. Paulsson to begin our counsel's presentation.  
 17 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you, Mr. Pate.  
 18 Mr. Paulsson.  
 19 MR. PAULSSON: Members of the Tribunal, nothing  
 20 like this case has ever been seen before. There have, of  
 21 course, been cases of fraud, cases of political corruption,  
 22 cases of failure of due process, but not all of these so  
 23 lamentably pervasive in a single case. If you take a  
 24 special interest in the subject of denial of justice, as I  
 25 have, you can read the multitude of decisions of Tribunals

09:08 1 and Commissions in the 19th and 20th centuries. You can  
 2 read the more recent judgments of international courts of  
 3 human rights or awards of investment treaty tribunals. You  
 4 will never come across such comprehensive and brazen  
 5 violations of due process.  
 6 Manufactured evidence, bribery, intimidation, a  
 7 ghostwritten Judgment, and all of the evidence documenting  
 8 this malfeasance cynically ignored by Ecuador's higher  
 9 courts and prosecutors without even the beginnings of a  
 10 plausible excuse for this determined indifference to such  
 11 shameful conduct.  
 12 But that is far from all. Ecuador's Head of  
 13 State has vociferously applauded this judicial debasement,  
 14 publicly demanding punishment of the foreigners and  
 15 branding all of those who dare to give them legal advice  
 16 as traitors to the homeland, "vende patrias." These are  
 17 not occasional outbursts, but an obsessive feature of the  
 18 Saturday addresses which have become a fixture of  
 19 President Correa's tenure. With his face filling the  
 20 country's television screens, he blames all of the  
 21 problems of the Oriente, not on the Ecuadorian  
 22 Government's policies with respect to agriculture,  
 23 resettlement, and land distribution, not on the abysmal  
 24 negligence of Petroecuador in environmental matters over  
 25 the past 23 years, but on foreign scapegoats, the first of

09:10 1 which, as he refers to Chevron, is "Texaco."  
 2 Apparently, it is not enough for Petroecuador to  
 3 shirk its own remedial obligations under the Settlement  
 4 and Release Agreements. Ecuador would now, with its joint  
 5 and several liability theory, have Chevron serve as  
 6 indemnitor for Petroecuador's current and future oil  
 7 operations in the area.  
 8 President Correa needs no evidence. He's the  
 9 Head of State and knows whom to punish. Emblematic of the  
 10 case's political prominence, in January 2014, the Vice  
 11 Minister of Foreign Affairs stated that enforcement of the  
 12 Judgment, I quote, "is one of the issues that we're going  
 13 to promote as part of Ecuador's foreign policy." That's  
 14 Exhibit C-2152. The meaning of all this has not been lost  
 15 on the judges hearing Chevron's appeals. The pattern of  
 16 threats, sanctions, and removals of judges who dare to  
 17 rule against the Government is clear. The question,  
 18 gentlemen, is not, as Ecuador would have it, how one could  
 19 find a denial of justice. The challenge is rather how  
 20 anyone could explain why this is not.  
 21 Here, the Ecuadorian judiciary, improperly  
 22 influenced by the Executive, turned itself into the  
 23 instrument of a fraudulent scheme, a shakedown to extort  
 24 billions of dollars from Chevron. As the forensic  
 25 evidence conclusively shows, the Judge at first instance

09:11 1 allowed the Plaintiffs' lawyers to draft the  
 2 billion-dollar Lago Agrio Judgment. The appellate Court  
 3 perpetuated the denial of justice by affirming every jot  
 4 and tittle of the ghostwritten judgment, without taking  
 5 any steps to investigate the substantial and unrefuted  
 6 evidence of misconduct Chevron had placed before  
 7 it--misconduct that in no sense is collateral or  
 8 ancillary, but goes to the core of the case. And the  
 9 Correa Administration is now actively promoting the  
 10 Judgment enforcement abroad, including through diplomatic  
 11 channels. We are, gentlemen, looking at a massive  
 12 meltdown of the rule of law.  
 13 The basic proposition governing this arbitration  
 14 is this: The state incurs international responsibility if  
 15 it administers its laws to aliens in a fundamentally  
 16 unfair manner. Your Tribunal is well acquainted with the  
 17 various formulations that have sought to encapsulate a  
 18 generic definition of denial of justice. Additional and  
 19 related standards of State conduct as set forth in the  
 20 Treaty itself, including the requirements of effective  
 21 means, fair and equitable treatment, and  
 22 non-discrimination.  
 23 I will not take time to repeat general abstract  
 24 propositions. With your permission I will return toward  
 25 the end of our presentation this morning to deal with

09:12 1 specific aspects of the subject, in particular the  
 2 exhaustion requirement.  
 3 The voluminous evidence before you speaks for  
 4 itself. What it shows is not indifference to fairness,  
 5 but rather positive antagonism to this all-important  
 6 value. Due process, it seems, is too good for foreigners  
 7 who resist extortion. This case is a result of a quid pro  
 8 quo alliance between a populist government and unethical  
 9 plaintiffs' attorneys, its machinations enabled by the  
 10 tragic reality of a subordinated judiciary. Knowing that  
 11 any suit against a State-owned company would be dead on  
 12 arrival in Ecuador's courts, the lawyers who represented  
 13 the Plaintiffs early on waived their rights to file any  
 14 claim against Petroecuador. And the lawsuit against  
 15 Chevron was manna to the Correa Administration, which was  
 16 keen to deflect attention away from Petroecuador's ongoing  
 17 and harmful operations and to place all blame for all  
 18 social ills in the Oriente on a long-departed U.S.  
 19 multinational.  
 20 Early on, it was clear that this case was not one  
 21 about science. When results from the judicial inspection  
 22 process failed to substantiate their fanciful claims, the  
 23 Plaintiffs, in Mr. Donziger's unforgettable words, decided  
 24 to go over to the dark side. After independent experts  
 25 rejected the need for remediation at Sacha 53, the

09:14 1 Plaintiffs pressured Judge Yáñez to cancel the judicial  
 2 inspection process and allow the Plaintiffs to select an  
 3 ostensibly independent Court-appointed expert who would,  
 4 as their lawyer secretly put it, totally play ball with  
 5 them.

6 Judge Yáñez was already embroiled in a  
 7 jobs-for-sex scandal and thus vulnerable. After the  
 8 Plaintiffs threatened to file a separate complaint against  
 9 him, Yáñez capitulated to their demand made in ex parte  
 10 meetings to which Chevron certainly was not invited, that  
 11 he appoint Mr. Cabrera. And while Ecuador's judiciary was  
 12 allowing the Plaintiffs to manufacture evidence, its  
 13 Executive was helping them create leverage by pursuing  
 14 baseless criminal charges against key company officials,  
 15 amongst the serious, most serious abuses there can be of  
 16 sovereign power. This was part of Ecuador's coordinated  
 17 efforts to undermine the Settlement and Release Agreement,  
 18 which stood as a legal bar to the Plaintiffs' diffuse  
 19 environmental claims.

20 Discovery of the Cabrera fraud through U.S.  
 21 Section 1782 proceedings did not cause Ecuador to blink  
 22 for a moment. Believing that the invocation of the word  
 23 sovereign could shield even the most egregious misconduct  
 24 and hoping no doubt that Chevron would at some point  
 25 capitulate to the threat of a multi billion dollar

09:15 1 liability and pay some lesser amount but still  
 2 astronomical amount, President Correa continued to give  
 3 his heavy-handed support.

4 The Lago Agrio Court yet again changed the  
 5 procedural rules to allow the Plaintiffs to file  
 6 makeweight cleansing Expert Reports. Still, the  
 7 Plaintiffs' counsel did not trust an Ecuadorian judge to  
 8 write a judgment that could be enforced abroad. Thus,  
 9 after being promised half a million dollars, Zambrano,  
 10 insufficiently experienced to write even the most routine  
 11 orders in civil cases, limited himself to signing the  
 12 pre-drafted 18 billion-dollar Judgment put before him.  
 13 Indeed, it seems unlikely Zambrano never even read the  
 14 Judgment, considering his inability to recall basic parts  
 15 of it during his RICO trial testimony. He has chosen not  
 16 to come here for this Hearing, while his government had  
 17 given him a cushy salary, but professes to have no means  
 18 to influence his decision.

19 The politics have only escalated since the  
 20 fraudulent judgment issued, with the Government doing all  
 21 it can to promote its enforcement abroad. Correa has  
 22 lobbied for its enforcement in State-to-State meetings.  
 23 The Ecuadorian enforcement court lent its hand by  
 24 purporting to pierce the corporate veil of Chevron and  
 25 scores of its subsidiaries around the world, and the

09:16 1 Executive Branch continues to work hand-in-hand with the  
 2 Plaintiffs, notably on the notorious Mano Sucia campaign,  
 3 the glossy anti-Chevron media rampage replete with its own  
 4 website and cameos by highly paid B-list celebrities whose  
 5 primary qualifications for opining on environmental  
 6 conditions seem to be that they have graced the covers of  
 7 People magazine.

8 What are a few million dollars of investment in  
 9 propaganda when you're trying to get your hands on  
 10 billions of dollars from a designated villain? If you're  
 11 looking for some comic relief in this sad affair, just  
 12 Google, for example, Sharon Stone and Lago Agrio. It will  
 13 lead you to a trail of cynicism and foolishness as long as  
 14 your patience will allow.

15 But this is a profoundly serious matter. The  
 16 rule of law is under attack. Forms of justice have been  
 17 abused. The narrative of this case is saturated with five  
 18 types of poison: Judicial fraud and corruption, gross  
 19 violations of due process, Executive interference,  
 20 Judgments which are a mockery of legal reasoning, factual  
 21 findings taken out of thin air.

22 Looked at from the prism of law, each of these  
 23 defects, if that's the word, standing alone constitutes a  
 24 sufficient basis for attracting international  
 25 responsibility. When they recur as comprehensively as in

09:18 1 this case and the State adopts an adamantly unrepentant  
 2 stance and simply ignores the voluminous evidence of fraud  
 3 as if it did not exist, we're faced with a denial of  
 4 justice of historic proportions.

5 Sitting across the table from you, you have the  
 6 Attorney General of Ecuador, who could tell you that his  
 7 Government has reconsidered and is finally ready to  
 8 disavow the corrupt judgment. That would be unexpected.  
 9 This Tribunal has already given Ecuador several  
 10 opportunities to correct this injustice, but it has  
 11 elected to disregard your Interim Measures Awards and  
 12 maintain its indefectible allegiance to Donziger and  
 13 Fajardo. Contrast Ecuador's choice with other members of  
 14 the conspiracy who have seen the light. The law firm of  
 15 Patton Boggs not only withdrew from the case, it expressed  
 16 its regret at becoming involved. Paid Chevron \$15 million  
 17 and relinquished its interest in the Judgment. A managing  
 18 partner of the New York firm Constantine Cannon testified  
 19 that he felt, his words, "physically ill" upon learning of  
 20 Stratus's role in drafting the Cabrera Report, prompting  
 21 his firm to withdraw. The Plaintiffs' principal funders  
 22 have also resiled. Burford Capital announced that it had  
 23 been fraudulently induced into the case, terminated its  
 24 funding agreement, and disclaimed any proceeds from the  
 25 judgment.

09:19 1 As for Joe Kohn, a well-known Philadelphia  
 2 Plaintiffs' attorney, he walked away from the case  
 3 notwithstanding the 16 years of work and the 7 million he  
 4 had personally invested in it. Russell DeLeon transferred  
 5 his stake in the Judgment and forfeited his \$23 million  
 6 investment in the scheme explaining that his law school  
 7 friend Donziger, had, his word, "mised" him about  
 8 important facts. And Stratus Consulting, the Colorado  
 9 firm the Plaintiffs hired to ghostwrite the Cabrera  
 10 Report, has disavowed all of its "findings and  
 11 conclusions," their words, and specifically acknowledged  
 12 the absence of any scientific data showing among other  
 13 things, groundwater contamination and adverse health  
 14 effects from petroleum.

15 Yet Ecuador's alliance with the Plaintiffs  
 16 endures. Bear this in mind when the Attorney General's  
 17 lawyers tell you that the Government would be more than  
 18 happy to correct the very wrong which it is now actively  
 19 seeking to enforce. If only Chevron would go to yet  
 20 another Ecuadorian Court to complain about Zambrano's  
 21 behavior, now under the Collusion Protection Act, and then  
 22 sometime in what remains of this decade get a decision  
 23 which can be appealed, gentlemen, to the very next-level  
 24 courts which have already ratified the Lago Agrio Judgment  
 25 without any consideration of its corrupt and fraudulent

09:21 1 foundation.

2 I will presently ask you to invite Mr. Bishop to  
 3 address you on the core subject of the fraud and the  
 4 corruption, which infuses the Lago Agrio Judgment. Next,  
 5 Mr. Coriell will show that the Lago Agrio Case, as it was  
 6 litigated and decided, concerns only diffuse environmental  
 7 claims barred by the Settlement and Release Agreement. He  
 8 will also analyze some of the more absurd legal features  
 9 of the Judgment itself.

10 You will then hear Ms. Renfroe deal with  
 11 environmental issues, with respect to which you will see  
 12 that Ecuador's allegations backfire and backfire badly.  
 13 Indeed, it was the inability of the Plaintiffs to prove  
 14 their allegations of contamination and establish causation  
 15 that led to manufacturing of evidence and other acts of  
 16 fraud that bring us here today.

17 As you listen to their presentations, I urge you  
 18 to ask yourself the question which Sir Gerald Fitzmaurice  
 19 articulated in his remarkable contribution on denial of  
 20 justice in the 1932 British Yearbook: "Is this a decision  
 21 which an honest and competent Court could possibly have  
 22 given?"

23 In fact, I would like to leave you with the  
 24 context of that question. Fitzmaurice was reflecting on  
 25 the accepted general rule that an erroneous conclusion of

09:22 1 law or fact, even though it results in a serious  
 2 injustice, does not suffice to engage the State's  
 3 responsibility. But he qualified this as follows, and I  
 4 quote him again: "An unjust judgment may and often does  
 5 afford strong evidence that the Court was dishonest; or,  
 6 rather, it raises a strong presumption of dishonesty. It  
 7 may even afford conclusive evidence if the injustice be  
 8 sufficiently flagrant so that the Judgment is of a kind  
 9 which no honest and competent Court could possibly have  
 10 given."

11 Let those words resonate as you now listen, if  
 12 you please, to Mr. Bishop.

13 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you.

14 Mr. Bishop.

15 MR. BISHOP: Thank you, Mr. Chairman.

16 An unjust Judgment, that label aptly describes  
 17 the Lago Agrio Judgment. The Lago Case involved a massive  
 18 scheme of extortion, corruption, and fraud fully supported  
 19 by the Government of Ecuador and with the willing  
 20 participation of Ecuadorian judges, all for the purpose of  
 21 fixing the outcome of the case regardless of its merits.

22 The result was a \$9.5 billion Judgment, the  
 23 largest in the history of the country by many factors, a  
 24 judgment which has now been affirmed by the highest court  
 25 of Ecuador and certified as enforceable without any review

09:23 1 of whether it was fraudulent or corrupt. And despite the  
 2 overwhelming evidence of fraud, the government has  
 3 embraced the Judgment and is willfully promoting its  
 4 enforcement around the world in violation of this  
 5 Tribunal's Interim Awards.

6 Now, you heard Professor Paulsson describe this  
 7 as the most comprehensive and pervasive example of denial  
 8 of justice in the history of international law, and it is,  
 9 indeed, without precedent. So, how did we get to this  
 10 point? How did the Lago Agrio Case come to this point?  
 11 I'd like to step back and take just a few moments to give  
 12 a broad overview of how we got here before I launch into  
 13 the details of the case.

14 In 1995, the Republic of Ecuador settled all  
 15 diffuse environmental claims with TexPet, with TexPet  
 16 agreeing to remediate certain sites that were agreed by  
 17 both Parties. Now, that left the remaining sites,  
 18 however, as the responsibility of Petroecuador. TexPet  
 19 performed its share of the remediation, and the Government  
 20 certified and approved that remediation at every single  
 21 site. And you've heard from Mr. Rosanía, who was the head  
 22 of the environmental department of the Ministry of Energy  
 23 at one of our earlier hearings. He testified before you  
 24 that the remediation was done properly and that he was  
 25 proud of it. And he was Ecuador's witness. They were the

09:25 1 ones who brought him to that Hearing.  
 2 But very importantly, the Government and  
 3 Petroecuador chose not to spend the money to remediate  
 4 their share of the sites, and that's a critical fact. If  
 5 the Government and Petroecuador had fulfilled their own  
 6 responsibilities, it's doubtful we would be here today,  
 7 but they didn't. And that Government decision created the  
 8 conditions for much of what has happened since in the Lago  
 9 Case.  
 10 After the Settlement Agreement was signed,  
 11 Ecuador changed governments and the new administration  
 12 made a deal with the Plaintiffs. At the request of the  
 13 Attorney General, the Plaintiffs' lawyer signed a waiver  
 14 of claims agreement, what they also referred to as a quid  
 15 pro quo agreement in which the Plaintiffs waived the right  
 16 to sue or recover from either the Government of Ecuador or  
 17 Petroecuador.  
 18 Now, that changed the political equation within  
 19 Ecuador.  
 20 With little or no economic risk then, the  
 21 Government was free to support the Plaintiffs politically,  
 22 and it could shift the financial burden as it saw it of  
 23 the remaining remediation away from Petroecuador and onto  
 24 the shoulders of Texaco and Chevron, resulting in a  
 25 windfall to the Government.

09:26 1 After he was elected the President of Ecuador,  
 2 President Correa found a useful political and  
 3 nationalistic issue in attacking a foreign company and  
 4 Chevron in supporting the indigenous peoples of the  
 5 Oriente. At that point, like a confluence of rivers  
 6 coming together, there was a joining of interests between  
 7 the Plaintiffs and the Government. And as you will see in  
 8 the factual presentation, the Plaintiffs' schemes and  
 9 misconduct grew bolder and bolder under the Correa  
 10 administration, but the Government's support of the  
 11 Plaintiffs and their case never wavered, no matter what  
 12 occurred.  
 13 The Government sided with the Plaintiffs and  
 14 became very much a partisan in this case. It made the  
 15 Plaintiffs' case into a national cause. President Correa  
 16 himself took strong public positions on issues in the  
 17 case, and he called for criminal charges to be filed  
 18 against Chevron's lawyers who had signed the Settlement  
 19 Agreement, and after he changed the Prosecutor General,  
 20 such charges were filed. During the course of the case,  
 21 Correa also undermined generally the independence of the  
 22 judiciary, purging judges who made decisions with which he  
 23 didn't agree, and sending a strong signal to all judges in  
 24 Ecuador to toe the Government line or face consequences.  
 25 There can be no doubt that President Correa was

09:28 1 trying to politically pressure and influence the courts,  
 2 effectively to undermine their independence and  
 3 impartiality.  
 4 Now, Steven Donziger, the Plaintiffs' lead  
 5 counsel had to find a way to circumvent the Plaintiffs'  
 6 causation problem with Petroecuador's operations, and he  
 7 also wanted to inflate the size and significance of the  
 8 case. He didn't like Petroecuador's \$70 million estimate  
 9 to remediate the area. He wanted damages hyperinflated  
 10 into the billions, and that greed for big money has been a  
 11 driving force throughout the Lago Agrio Case.  
 12 Now, to accomplish this, he needed a technical  
 13 expert to provide some external validation of his claims,  
 14 and he found the perfect vehicle in the sole  
 15 Court-appointed global damage expert, Richard Cabrera, who  
 16 was willing to sell his Report to the Plaintiffs for a  
 17 price.  
 18 Now, even though Cabrera was a court auxiliary  
 19 with obligations to the Parties of independence and  
 20 impartiality, he accepted bribes, and he allowed the  
 21 Plaintiffs to ghostwrite his Reports, but that fraud came  
 22 undone and was publicly exposed in 2010. Now, since at  
 23 that point the case was drawing to a close and Cabrera was  
 24 the only basis for a large damage award, the Plaintiffs  
 25 had to use his work, but they also had to disguise his

09:29 1 work through what they themselves referred to as  
 2 "cleansing experts."  
 3 Now, with the Cabrera fraud exposed, the  
 4 Plaintiffs' lawyers now knew, in fact more than ever, that  
 5 they needed to control the contents of the Judgment. They  
 6 had too many problems simply to leave the Judgment to  
 7 chance. They had to make sure the Judgment's reliance on  
 8 Cabrera was disguised. They had to justify suing the  
 9 wrong party in Chevron. They had to justify why the  
 10 Judgment could ignore Petroecuador's impacts, and they  
 11 needed a trust in order to assure their funders that all  
 12 the money wouldn't disappear.  
 13 So, when the opportunity presented itself with  
 14 Judge Zambrano taking over the case, they made a corrupt  
 15 deal to pay a bribe in exchange for being able to  
 16 ghostwrite the Judgment. And having struck this deal,  
 17 they then drafted the Judgment using what they had before  
 18 them, which was their own internal memos and documents.  
 19 But that scheme was also exposed, and we might  
 20 well ask: Once the Cabrera scheme was exposed publicly  
 21 and the ghostwriting of the Judgment scheme was exposed,  
 22 what happened in Ecuador?  
 23 Now, one would expect that a normal and neutral  
 24 Government and judiciary would be outraged by this  
 25 conduct. One would expect that they would demand and



09:31 1 aggressively pursue investigations to get to the bottom of  
2 the scandal and insist on it.

3 But what happened in Ecuador is very revealing  
4 because what happened in Ecuador is nothing, because the  
5 Plaintiffs had the strong political support of President  
6 Correa and the Government, and President Correa had  
7 committed the Government to the Plaintiffs' case as a  
8 national cause, so nothing was done.

9 So, even after the fraud and corruption was  
10 revealed, the Government continued to support the  
11 Plaintiffs and their attorneys, and it stonewalled all  
12 investigations. No one has been charged, no one has been  
13 punished. And the Government has chosen to support the  
14 fraudulent Judgment, and even to promote its enforcement  
15 abroad, thereby flouting the Interim Awards issued by this  
16 Tribunal to maintain the status quo.

17 But what about the appeals, you might ask? Well,  
18 in 2007, President Correa had battled with the  
19 Constitutional Court, and then he purged all the members  
20 of that Court somewhat violently and replaced them with  
21 his own supporters; and later the Judges on the National  
22 Court of Justice were also replaced, so with President  
23 Correa strongly supporting the Plaintiffs in their case,  
24 the appellate and cassation courts decided, well, they  
25 decided they just couldn't decide the claims of fraud and

09:33 1 corruption or even review those claims. They just didn't  
2 have jurisdiction, they said.

3 But they did have jurisdiction, it seems, to  
4 affirm the fraudulent Judgment and certify it as  
5 enforceable around the world, despite the evidence of  
6 fraud.

7 No words were wasted by the appellate courts on  
8 the possibility of remanding the case to a lower court to  
9 review the evidence of corruption before affirming the  
10 Judgment and allowing it to become enforceable.

11 So, where does that leave us? An Ecuadorian judge  
12 agreed to a bribe and allowed the Plaintiffs themselves to  
13 decide their own case and write their own Judgment and  
14 award themselves \$9.5 billion. There was no impartial  
15 decision-maker. And knowing the Government's strong  
16 support of the Plaintiffs' case, the stacked appellate  
17 courts abdicated their constitutional responsibility and  
18 affirmed and certified the Judgment as enforceable. And  
19 despite the evidence of fraud, the Government has made the  
20 Lago Case into a national cause and is promoting the  
21 Judgment around the world as a first priority of the  
22 government's foreign policy.

23 In sum, the conduct of the Republic as a whole  
24 breaches the Settlement Agreement, it breaches your Interim  
25 Awards, it violates the Bilateral Investment Treaty, and it

09:34 1 constitutes a denial of justice.

2 Now, my task today is to outline key facts of the  
3 case, and I've organized my presentation to address six  
4 issues:

5 First, the Government's political interference  
6 with the case;

7 Second, the Cabrera fraud that taints the  
8 Judgment;

9 Third, the Plaintiffs' payments to Mr. Guerra to  
10 ghostwrite Court Orders favorably to them in the Lago Case;

11 Fourth, the Plaintiffs' ghostwriting of the  
12 Judgment;

13 Fifth, Zambrano's false testimony in the RICO case  
14 about how the Judgment was created;

15 And, finally, the Appellate Courts' failure to  
16 review the allegations of fraud and corruption.

17 And in due course, I'll also address Ecuador's  
18 factual arguments.

19 Now, in the course of this arbitration, Claimants  
20 have provided overwhelming evidence that at least nine of  
21 the Plaintiffs' internal documents that were never filed in  
22 the Court record were used in drafting the Judgment, and  
23 Ecuador itself admits that at least three of those  
24 documents were used in preparing the Judgment. The Fusion  
25 Memo, the Selva Viva Database, and the Clapp Report. And

09:35 1 here's why.

2 On Slide 10 what you'll see is Pages 20, 21, and  
3 24 of the Judgment, and the highlighted portions that you  
4 see are the words that the Judgment took verbatim, word for  
5 word from the Plaintiffs' own Fusion memo. As you can see,  
6 almost every single word on the page was copied from that  
7 document. And the Fusion Memo is not found anywhere in the  
8 Court record.

9 Now, these facts alone established that the  
10 Plaintiffs ghostwrote the Judgment, but this is only one  
11 example. There is much more, and I'll return to this in  
12 more detail later in my presentation.

13 There are four characters who played key roles in  
14 implementing the fraudulent scheme that resulted in the  
15 Judgment. The first one is Steven Donziger, the  
16 Plaintiffs' lead lawyer in the Lago Case who sought to  
17 politicize the case, who, in his own words, intimidated the  
18 Lago Agrio judges, and who is the author of the now  
19 admitted Cabrera fraud. We have a video clip in which you  
20 can hear from Donziger himself about the litigation tactics  
21 that he pursued in the case.

22 (Video played.)

23 MR. BISHOP: Now, the second--

24 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Just help us, for the  
25 transcript, that's Exhibit C-360?

09:38 1 MR. BISHOP: Yes, Exhibit C-360, yes, that's  
 2 correct.  
 3 ARBITRATOR GRIGERA NAÓN: Is my understanding  
 4 correct that the lady is from Stratus?  
 5 MR. BISHOP: Yes, that was Ann Maest, who was from  
 6 Stratus. That's correct. She was one of the consultants  
 7 to the Plaintiffs for environmental issues. That's right.  
 8 Now, the second of the characters I'll mention is  
 9 Rafael Correa who, after being elected President of  
 10 Ecuador, adopted the Plaintiffs' case as a national cause.  
 11 He endorsed the Plaintiffs' case. He condemned Chevron in  
 12 the strongest possible terms, and he has embraced and  
 13 promoted the Judgment as a matter of Government policy.  
 14 The third, there is Judge Nicolás Zambrano, who  
 15 had been a corrupt criminal prosecutor, and he needed help  
 16 in drafting even simple Court Orders, so he turned to his  
 17 friend Alberto Guerra to ghostwrite Orders in the Lago  
 18 Agrio case. Zambrano ultimately sold the Judgment to the  
 19 Plaintiffs in return for allowing them to ghostwrite it.  
 20 And fourth and finally, there's Alberto Guerra.  
 21 He was an insider to the fraudulent scheme. He was paid  
 22 by the Plaintiffs to draft Court Orders favorably for them  
 23 in the Lago Case, and he was Zambrano's intermediary in  
 24 approaching the Plaintiffs' lawyers about a bribe in  
 25 return for ghostwriting the Judgment.

09:39 1 Now, of these four, only Mr. Guerra is going to  
 2 testify before you in the course of the next three weeks,  
 3 and that's because we're bringing him. Guerra is here  
 4 precisely because he agreed to provide evidence to  
 5 Chevron, and then fearing for his safety in his native  
 6 Ecuador, he came to the United States where Chevron is  
 7 financially supporting him in what is effectively a  
 8 witness protection program. Chevron would not be doing  
 9 that, and indeed would not need to do that, if he weren't  
 10 in danger in Ecuador.  
 11 In fact, what does it say about the Government,  
 12 that both the President and the Vice President of the  
 13 country have called Guerra a traitor, a traitor to the  
 14 nation just for giving evidence in this case? Now, that's  
 15 an attempt to intimidate a witness, and it comes from the  
 16 highest political officials of the country.  
 17 But Mr. Guerra's testimony has been important for  
 18 revealing the truth of what happened during the case  
 19 because it was only after Guerra came forward, for  
 20 example, that it was learned that Zambrano had solicited a  
 21 bribe from the Plaintiffs. After that, Mr. Donziger was  
 22 confronted about it in his testimony at the RICO trial,  
 23 and he had to admit it. But that fact would never have  
 24 come to light except for the testimony of Mr. Guerra.  
 25 Now, the question for this Tribunal with regard

09:41 1 to Guerra isn't his general character. He admits that, as  
 2 a judge, he both solicited and accepted bribes. We're not  
 3 bringing him here because he's a saint. The Claimants are  
 4 bringing him to testify precisely because he was an  
 5 insider to the scheme, to the fraud, and the specific  
 6 question for you to decide is simply whether he's telling  
 7 the truth about specific matters related to this case.  
 8 And you certainly don't have to just take his word for it.  
 9 You're undoubtedly going to want to know the extent to  
 10 which his evidence is corroborated by independent  
 11 evidence, and it is, and you can.  
 12 And you can look to the report of Mr. Adam  
 13 Torres, an expert witness for us that you have before you,  
 14 because he reviews that corroborating evidence in detail  
 15 in that report.  
 16 Now, in fact, the documentary evidence that he  
 17 discusses is, by itself, sufficient to prove the  
 18 ghostwriting of the Court Orders and the Judgment.  
 19 Mr. Guerra just explains it.  
 20 Now, Ecuador itself could have brought to this  
 21 Hearing Mr. Zambrano to testify, but they're not. They  
 22 could have brought Mr. Donziger or Pablo Fajardo, another  
 23 of the key Plaintiffs' lawyers. And if their testimony  
 24 would have been helpful to its case, they certainly would  
 25 have brought them here to testify before you. But in the

09:42 1 course of the next three weeks you will not hear from any  
 2 of those men.  
 3 Now, when Donziger took over as lead counsel in  
 4 the Lago Case in late 2005, the Plaintiffs had a major  
 5 problem on the merits of the case: They weren't finding  
 6 significant contamination during the judicial inspections  
 7 and the testing. Their own experts, David Russell and Dr.  
 8 Charles Calmbacher, were telling them that in their  
 9 e-mails, so Donziger responded by falsifying the Expert  
 10 Reports of Dr. Calmbacher, and Dr. Calmbacher has  
 11 testified to that fact under oath.  
 12 But the crowning blow to the Plaintiff's effort  
 13 to mount a legitimate case fell at Sacha 53 in early 2006  
 14 when the five independent settling experts found that  
 15 there was no significant risk to human health or the  
 16 environment. Now, unfortunately, that was the only report  
 17 that they were ever allowed to give because at that point  
 18 the Plaintiffs changed their strategy. Donziger changed  
 19 their strategy. He refocused it away from the merits of  
 20 the case and on to two new prongs: First, politics as a  
 21 way to pressure the judges, and second the appointment of  
 22 a single global expert and one that he could control.  
 23 Now, in his own words, Donziger tells us why he  
 24 focused on politics, and I will let him speak for himself.  
 25 (Video played.)

09:45 1 MR. BISHOP: I want you to note that last clip in  
 2 particular, "we're mobilizing the country politically so  
 3 that no judge can rule against us and feel like he can get  
 4 away from it in terms of his career." That summarizes  
 5 exactly why Donziger sought to politicize the case: To  
 6 control the judges, to make them fear the Plaintiffs, to  
 7 undermine their impartiality ultimately.  
 8 And Donziger found an eager ally in the newly  
 9 elected President Correa. When President Correa took  
 10 office in January 2007, he invited the Plaintiffs' lawyers  
 11 to give a presentation to the cabinet of the new  
 12 government, after which, according to Donziger, he  
 13 appointed a commission to monitor the case.  
 14 But I want you to note in this slide the last  
 15 statement made by Donziger: "This is becoming, as we had  
 16 always envisioned, a true national issue." Now, that's  
 17 important. He wanted the Plaintiffs' case to be adopted  
 18 by the Government as a national issue because then no  
 19 judge could rule against them and get away with it. That  
 20 was the point.  
 21 President Correa strongly allied himself and his  
 22 Government with the Plaintiffs at this point. He toured  
 23 the Oriente with the Plaintiffs' lawyers in April 2007 and  
 24 repeatedly proclaimed that the Plaintiffs had the full  
 25 support and backing of the National Government, including

09:46 1 its assistance in gathering evidence.  
 2 He endorsed the Plaintiffs' case, taking a strong  
 3 public position, and I quote him, "Texaco must be held  
 4 liable," thereby sending a strong message to the courts  
 5 about how they should rule in the case. And he even told  
 6 the Plaintiffs privately that he would personally call the  
 7 Judge. And the only reason to do any of that was to  
 8 undermine the impartiality of the judges.  
 9 And so that no one would miss the point, he  
 10 publicly called the Plaintiffs' lawyers true heroes,  
 11 personally giving them his endorsement, and by contrast,  
 12 he called Chevron's lawyers traitors to the nation, vende  
 13 patrias. And he later called Chevron's witnesses and  
 14 experts traitors as well, and the State published the  
 15 names and personal information about Chevron's lawyers and  
 16 experts, including their personal identification numbers.  
 17 Correa also called for criminal charges to be  
 18 filed against the Chevron lawyers who had signed the  
 19 Settlement Agreements; and, after that, criminal charges  
 20 were filed. And repeatedly and during the case, he called  
 21 Chevron "an open enemy of the country." "Enemy" and  
 22 "traitors," now those are strong words. That's the  
 23 language of a national interest, a national interest  
 24 that's threatened by a foreign enemy and a national  
 25 interest that's being betrayed from within.

09:48 1 And it's also the language of intimidation,  
 2 seeking to foreclose Ecuadorian lawyers, experts and  
 3 witnesses from working with Chevron.  
 4 So, in short, as Donziger had hoped, President  
 5 Correa made the Lago Agrio Case into a matter of national  
 6 interest, a national cause, and repeatedly signaled the  
 7 courts his strong position on the case and that of the  
 8 Government and what he expected them to do.  
 9 Now, the second issue that I will take up is that  
 10 of the Cabrera fraud. You have seen the video clips of  
 11 Donziger. He wanted a massive Judgment, and he wasn't  
 12 willing to confine himself to the boundaries of the  
 13 evidence. In his own words, he wanted to jack up the  
 14 damage numbers into the billions so he could pressure  
 15 Chevron. But to do that, he needed a vehicle, a vehicle  
 16 that would provide external validation, and he needed to  
 17 control that vehicle. Now, that vehicle was the sole  
 18 court-appointed global damage expert, and Donziger gained  
 19 control because of a weakened Judge Yáñez was willing to  
 20 appoint the Plaintiff's handpicked choice, Richard  
 21 Cabrera, with whom they had already secretly been meeting  
 22 and Cabrera was willing to sell his Report to them for  
 23 bribes.  
 24 Now, although Judge Yáñez had twice told Fajardo  
 25 that there was no legal basis for terminating the judicial

09:49 1 inspections and Fajardo had reported that in e-mails,  
 2 nevertheless, Donziger and Fajardo coerced Judge Yáñez  
 3 into ending those inspections. And we can see it in  
 4 Donziger's own words in Slide 18, and I will quote him.  
 5 He framed the issue this way: "Our issues first and  
 6 foremost are whether the Judge will accept the renuncia of  
 7 the inspections. If it doesn't happen, then we're in an  
 8 all-out war with the Judge to get him removed."  
 9 You see the Plaintiffs' attitude brazenly  
 10 reflected in that statement by Donziger. And what they  
 11 did next was that they brought a mob of demonstrators to  
 12 the Court to protest before the Judge, to intimidate the  
 13 Judge. That was their strategy. And again, Donziger says  
 14 it in his e-mails very clearly.  
 15 Now, after that demonstration, they then met with  
 16 the Judge, and again Donziger tells us what happened:  
 17 "Pablo Fajardo met with the Judge today. The Judge, who  
 18 is on his heels from the charges of trading jobs for sex  
 19 in the Court, says he is going to accept our request to  
 20 withdraw the rest of the inspections. The Judge wants to  
 21 forestall the filing of a complaint against him by us,  
 22 which we have prepared but not yet filed."  
 23 And then Donziger tells us the ending of this  
 24 part of the story: "Legal case: Going well with Yáñez  
 25 decision to cancel inspections. We wrote up a complaint

09:51 1 against Yánez, but never filed it, while letting him know  
 2 we might file it if he doesn't adhere to the law and what  
 3 we need."  
 4 Now, those statements by Donziger are striking.  
 5 They're striking because of their clear intent to coerce  
 6 the Judge, to undermine the impartiality of the Judge;  
 7 that is, to get the ruling they wanted by whatever means  
 8 were necessary to get it.  
 9 The Federal Court in the Southern District of New  
 10 York in the RICO Case summarized exactly what happened  
 11 next with respect to this. Donziger and Fajardo took  
 12 advantage of a weakened Judge Yánez. They made him fear  
 13 the Plaintiffs, and they coerced him into terminating the  
 14 judicial inspections and appointing Cabrera as the global  
 15 damage expert.  
 16 Now, as the global expert, Cabrera was an  
 17 auxiliary of the Court, in the Court's own words in one of  
 18 its Orders. He was the auxiliary of the Court for  
 19 purposes of determining the scientific elements of the  
 20 case on which the Judgment was going to be based, and he  
 21 had an obligation to the Parties under the law of complete  
 22 impartiality, independence and transparency, and that's  
 23 again, provided in the Court Orders and the law.  
 24 But despite those obligations of independence,  
 25 Donziger had something quite different in mind for the

09:52 1 independent--or the supposedly independent expert, and  
 2 Donziger described several times in several ways exactly  
 3 what he intended, and this is one of them. He said that  
 4 what they were looking for in the global expert was  
 5 someone who would "totally play ball with us and let us  
 6 take the lead while projecting the image that he is  
 7 working for the Court." Somebody who would let us take  
 8 the lead and play ball with us totally, but project an  
 9 image he's working for the Court. That's what he said.  
 10 He wanted somebody he could hold out to the world  
 11 as an independent validation of their claims, but somebody  
 12 he could secretly control. In other words, he wanted to  
 13 corrupt the Court process, and that's exactly what was  
 14 done.  
 15 Now, even though the Plaintiffs knew that Cabrera  
 16 was obligated to be independent and impartial, they  
 17 secretly met with him and planned his work. Now,  
 18 Slide 22, which you see before you, is from a secret  
 19 meeting of March 3, 2007, attended by the Plaintiffs'  
 20 lawyers, their technical environmental experts, and  
 21 Mr. Cabrera. You see Cabrera in the middle, Pablo Fajardo  
 22 on the right and Luis Yanza of the President of the Amazon  
 23 Defense Front on the left. This meeting took place before  
 24 Cabrera was appointed, but the Plaintiffs had already  
 25 wired his appointment with the Judge so they knew exactly

09:54 1 what was going to happen.  
 2 But I would also call your attention to the  
 3 PowerPoint that you see behind them. This is the  
 4 PowerPoint that Fajardo used in conducting the meeting,  
 5 and it's entitled "Plan for the Global Expert Report."  
 6 And this is a clip of Mr. Fajardo conducting that meeting.  
 7 (Video played.)  
 8 MR. BISHOP: "But not Chevron." "But not  
 9 Chevron." Chevron was to be kept in the dark about this  
 10 whole process, in Donziger's words.  
 11 Now, in the course of their secret meetings with  
 12 Cabrera and with Judge Yánez, the Plaintiffs' lawyers used  
 13 code names to describe Cabrera and Yánez, the cook and the  
 14 waiter. Now, you've seen in previous hearings that we've  
 15 had, this and other e-mails in which Plaintiffs use these  
 16 code names, the cook to describe Judge Yánez, and the  
 17 waiter to describe Cabrera.  
 18 Now, why would they do that? Why would they use  
 19 code names? The only reason is because they knew what  
 20 they were doing was wrong. They knew what they were doing  
 21 was illegal. And the reason they were using code names is  
 22 reinforced, in fact, by the fact that they were bribing  
 23 Cabrera from what they themselves referred to as "our  
 24 secret account." Our secret account. Those aren't my  
 25 words. Those are the Plaintiffs' own words. They paid

09:56 1 Cabrera more than \$100,000 from their secret account and  
 2 they even gave him fringe benefits like insurance. And  
 3 they installed as his Secretary one of the Plaintiffs'  
 4 lawyers girlfriends and in their e-mails they said exactly  
 5 why they were doing it: Which was to control Cabrera in  
 6 his work.  
 7 Now, what did the Plaintiffs get in return from  
 8 Cabrera? Well, as their secret meeting showed, they got  
 9 to plan his work, they got to conduct his sampling and his  
 10 testing. Donziger, in fact, has testified in the RICO  
 11 Case that the Plaintiffs themselves prepared Cabrera's  
 12 Work Plan, and they told him where and what to sample for.  
 13 And they got to control his results and recommendations by  
 14 ghostwriting his reports.  
 15 Now, Stratus Consulting Company is--was the  
 16 Plaintiffs' main environmental consultants. They  
 17 ghostwrote most of Cabrera's Reports. Getting the  
 18 evidence out of Stratus to prove this wasn't easy. It  
 19 required filing 1782 discovery proceedings in the United  
 20 States and fighting many battles in court. Stratus  
 21 resisted giving up their e-mails, and Donziger tried to  
 22 obstruct the process, as the RICO Court found. But piece  
 23 by piece the evidence came out, and now we know exactly  
 24 what happened.  
 25 Douglas Beltman was in charge of this project for

09:58 1 Stratus, and he has now testified as to exactly what the  
2 fraudulent scheme was and how it played out.  
3 What happened is that Stratus was asked by the  
4 Plaintiffs' lawyers to ghostwrite Cabrera's First Report,  
5 and they ghostwrote it in English, a language that Cabrera  
6 doesn't speak, and they ghostwrote it in the first person  
7 as if it were being written by "I," Cabrera, and they  
8 carefully kept their own involvement in this process  
9 secret per the instructions of Mr. Donziger. And also per  
10 his instructions, they came to exactly the results he  
11 wanted, recommending \$16 billion in damages.  
12 But that wasn't the ended of Stratus' work  
13 because Stratus was then asked by the Plaintiffs to  
14 prepare comments for the Plaintiffs to file in Court to  
15 the Cabrera Report criticizing it, saying it hadn't gone  
16 far enough, it hadn't considered all the damages, and the  
17 damages weren't big enough, so then Stratus prepared  
18 comments for the Plaintiffs to file to that report, which  
19 they themselves had ghostwritten, critiquing it. Then  
20 Stratus was asked to prepare Cabrera's Second Report  
21 responding to those comments that the Plaintiffs had filed  
22 in Court, that they had ghostwritten, and so they  
23 ghostwrote Cabrera's Second Report, and not surprisingly,  
24 accepted their own recommendations and increased the  
25 damages now to an incredible \$27 billion.

10:00 1 This was a well-orchestrated scheme controlled by  
2 Donziger and Fajardo to, in Donziger's words, "jack up the  
3 damages" into the billions, to hold out Cabrera as  
4 independent validation for their case, and to pressure  
5 Chevron. But the Cabrera Reports were a fraud from the  
6 very beginning. Bought and paid for and controlled by the  
7 Plaintiffs.  
8 And all of this is now admitted. Stratus has  
9 admitted under oath secretly ghostwriting the Cabrera  
10 Reports. Donziger has admitted it in his RICO testimony,  
11 and Ecuador doesn't dispute the key facts of this Cabrera  
12 fraud.  
13 Now, when Stratus' e-mails were being subpoenaed  
14 and the fraud started to be exposed in 2010, one of the  
15 Plaintiffs' lawyers in Ecuador wrote to Donziger and said  
16 this: "The effects are potentially devastating in  
17 Ecuador. Apart from destroying the proceeding, all of us,  
18 your attorneys, might go to jail."  
19 The Plaintiffs' Ecuadorian lawyers knew that what  
20 they had done was illegal, they said it right here, very  
21 clearly. And we might well ask, why didn't they go to  
22 jail? Why didn't this destroy the proceeding? Why  
23 weren't the Plaintiffs' lawyers investigated and charged?  
24 The answer undoubtedly lies in the strong political  
25 support they had obtained from President Correa and his

10:01 1 Government.  
2 Now, having invested three years in the Cabrera  
3 Reports, the Plaintiffs couldn't get rid of Cabrera. This  
4 was three years of the case with Cabrera as the key  
5 component. So, while they couldn't get rid of Cabrera,  
6 though, they needed to disguise him, so Donziger hatched a  
7 new scheme which he referred to as the "cleansing  
8 process." The purpose was to cleanse the case of the  
9 taint of the Cabrera fraud. Although the time had long  
10 passed under Ecuadorian law to appoint expert witnesses,  
11 the Plaintiffs simply invented a new procedure. And Judge  
12 Ordoñez sanctioned that new procedure, entering what can  
13 only be referred to as a bizarre and biased order,  
14 allowing them to file what was called "specialist  
15 reports"--they couldn't call them experts because they  
16 couldn't have new experts, but to file specialist  
17 reports--and to do see in only six weeks. And as soon as  
18 that six weeks had expired and those reports were filed,  
19 Judge Ordoñez immediately closed the case.  
20 Now, one of the Plaintiffs' lawyers said in an  
21 e-mail exactly what they had in mind for these cleansing  
22 experts. They wanted experts who would "rely on the same  
23 data as Cabrera and come to the same conclusions as  
24 Cabrera so Cabrera could be accepted as a valid basis for  
25 damages." That was the point: Use Cabrera but disguise

10:03 1 him.  
2 Now, Donziger was asked in his deposition about  
3 these experts, and what they did to come to their  
4 conclusions, and this is his testimony:  
5 "QUESTION: Did any of the new experts go to  
6 Ecuador?  
7 "ANSWER: I don't believe so.  
8 "QUESTION: None of them did new site  
9 inspection?  
10 "ANSWER: That's correct.  
11 "QUESTION: None of them did any new  
12 sampling?  
13 "ANSWER: They did not as far as I know.  
14 "QUESTION: Or environmental testing?  
15 "ANSWER: That's correct.  
16 "QUESTION: All of the experts prepared their  
17 reports in the span of approximately a month or  
18 less?  
19 "ANSWER: That's about right, yes."  
20 The new experts relied on the Cabrera Reports and  
21 data because they had to do so. None of them had ever  
22 been to Ecuador or done any sampling or testing of their  
23 own.  
24 Mr. Barnthouse is an example of that. He  
25 testified very candidly that he based his ecological

10:04 1 assessment on the Cabrera Report, and yet the Judgment  
2 cites Mr. Barnhouse for ecological damages. This is an  
3 example of the Judgment relying on the Cabrera Reports in  
4 disguise.  
5 Now, another place where the Judgment clearly  
6 relies on the Cabrera Report is in its finding that there  
7 are 880 pits to be remediated.  
8 Now, the Judgment says that the Judge himself  
9 determined that number by interpreting the aerial  
10 photographs of the area.  
11 Well, Mr. James Ebert, who among other things, is  
12 an expert in interpreting aerial photographs, says it's  
13 highly unlikely if not impossible for the Judge to have  
14 done that. Among other reasons, because there are no  
15 photographs for about a third of the sites. The photos  
16 were in black and white, they were monoscopic, and they  
17 were of low resolution.  
18 So, what the Judgment says that the Judge did just  
19 isn't possible.  
20 But, in fact, we know where the 880 number comes  
21 from. It comes from the Cabrera Report, Annex H-1. The  
22 Judgment says that the 880 pits are ones that have some  
23 Environmental Impact that cannot be attributed to  
24 Petroecuador. Well, Annex H-1 of the Cabrera Report lists  
25 certain pits and information about those pits. And when

10:05 1 you subtract from that number, the no-impact pits and those  
2 attributed to Petroecuador according to the comments in  
3 Annex H-1, what you're left with is a number, 880. So that  
4 number came from Cabrera's Reports itself. It didn't come  
5 from the Judge himself becoming an expert all of a sudden  
6 in reading aerial photographs.  
7 And that pit number was important because it was  
8 an integral part of the calculation of how the Judgment  
9 reached the number of \$5.4 billion for soil remediation.  
10 That \$5.4 billion is a calculation of 880 pits times  
11 \$6 million per pit for remediation. That's how the  
12 Judgment got there. Both of those numbers are grossly  
13 inflated, and I might add that the \$6 million per pit, for  
14 example, that the norm in the industry is only about  
15 \$75,000 per pit.  
16 Well, looking at this same evidence, the Federal  
17 Court in the Southern District of New York found that the  
18 Judgment relied upon the Cabrera fraud in at least three  
19 ways: For the pit count, as we have just gone through, for  
20 the potable water damages, and by relying on the Barnhouse  
21 Report which, in turn, relied upon Cabrera. So, thus, the  
22 Federal Court found that the Cabrera Report, "played an  
23 important role in holding Chevron liable to the extent of  
24 more than \$8 billion."  
25 Now, Ecuador tells you that, well, the Judgment on

10:07 1 its face says it didn't rely on Cabrera, and that's the end  
2 of the story. That's their response. Well, it's not. We  
3 have to look at the substance, not merely the form.  
4 Formalistic declarations cannot substitute for a thorough  
5 investigation and analysis of the fraud. When there is  
6 fraud in a case, as there clearly is in this instance, a  
7 court cannot rely on the record without investigating the  
8 fraud, determining what happened, delineating the fraud and  
9 its effects very precisely, and ensuring that those effects  
10 are thoroughly expunged from the case. But neither the  
11 Lago Agrio Court nor the Appellate Courts ever engaged in  
12 that analysis. They never did that.  
13 And because the courts refused to investigate and  
14 decide the fraud as well as delineate and expunge its real  
15 effects, they ensured that the taint of the Cabrera fraud  
16 would endure in the Judgment.  
17 But regardless of the failure to investigate, the  
18 Judgment, as we have just seen, does rely upon the Cabrera  
19 Reports. Ecuador admits that the Judgment relies on the  
20 Cabrera data. The cleansing experts relied on Cabrera's  
21 data in his Reports to a significant extent, as they had to  
22 do, and the Rico Court itself found the Judgment, both  
23 directly and indirectly, relies on the Cabrera Reports.  
24 The Plaintiffs had invested three years of this  
25 case in Cabrera. He was the only basis for a large damage

10:09 1 award, so the Judgment had to rely on Cabrera, and it did  
2 so.  
3 I will turn next to my third point, that Mr.  
4 Guerra was paid by the Plaintiffs to ghostwrite Court  
5 Orders favorably to the Plaintiffs. In Ecuador, it's  
6 illegal for anyone other than the Judge to draft Court  
7 Orders or Judgments or to assist the Judge in doing so, as  
8 Dr. Velázquez testifies in his expert report which you have  
9 before you.  
10 But following their pattern of ghostwriting the  
11 Cabrera Reports, the Plaintiffs also ghostwrote Judge  
12 Zambrano's Court's Orders in the Lago Case. Zambrano had  
13 been a criminal prosecutor from 1994 until 2008 when he  
14 became a judge, and he wasn't experienced though in either  
15 the substance or the procedure of civil cases. He needed  
16 somebody to help him with Court Orders in civil cases. And  
17 at that point in time, Mr. Guerra needed a job. So Guerra  
18 and Zambrano had a close long-standing relationship as they  
19 have both testified, so Zambrano asked Guerra to ghostwrite  
20 Court Orders for him generally in these civil cases.  
21 And Zambrano himself has admitted that in his RICO  
22 testimony. He admitted that Guerra drafted Court Orders  
23 for him in civil cases in the period 2009 to 2012, which  
24 happens to be exactly the period when Zambrano was  
25 presiding over the Chevron Case. And he's also admitted

10:10 1 that Guerra would sometimes ship him drafts of the Court  
 2 Orders using TAME Shipping, and you have the TAME Shipping  
 3 records before you in this case.  
 4 So, now, the scope and extent of that ghostwriting  
 5 is made clear by the Expert Reports of Spencer Lynch, who  
 6 is a Digital Forensics Expert with the Stroz Friedberg  
 7 firm. He's testified that he found on Zambrano's computers  
 8 82 Court Orders that were issued by him that ultimately had  
 9 originated, however, on Guerra's computers, and at least 48  
 10 of those draft rulings were saved on USB devices which were  
 11 shared between Guerra's computer and Zambrano's computer.  
 12 So, there is no dispute that Guerra was ghostwriting Court  
 13 Orders for Zambrano.  
 14 Now, Guerra has testified that his ghostwriting  
 15 included the Chevron Case, but Zambrano denied that. When  
 16 Judge Núñez was being recused in September 2009 and  
 17 Zambrano was taking over for the first time, Chevron filed  
 18 a motion to nullify all of Núñez's Orders because of the  
 19 videotapes that showed him pre-judging Chevron's guilt  
 20 during a bribery scandal. This was the first motion that  
 21 Zambrano was asked to decide when he took over the case.  
 22 Around that time, Guerra contacted Chevron's  
 23 Ecuadorian lawyers to fix that motion for a price, but  
 24 Chevron declined. There is in the record of this case a  
 25 contemporaneous Affidavit made in October 2009 by

10:14 1 this time to describe Guerra and Zambrano, the puppeteer  
 2 and the puppet. "The puppeteer won't move his puppet until  
 3 the audience pays him something," and "since we are paying  
 4 the puppeteer." Well, again, we can ask ourselves why  
 5 would they do this? Why are they resorting to code names  
 6 for Guerra and Zambrano? Well, the answer again is they  
 7 were secretly paying Guerra to ghostwrite these Court  
 8 Orders, and that's illegal in Ecuador.  
 9 Now, the third corroboration you will find on  
 10 Slide 43, and this is very important: This is very  
 11 revealing. Because we have the bank records of both  
 12 Mr. Guerra and of the Plaintiffs themselves, and we can  
 13 match them up to show that Mr. Guerra's testimony that he  
 14 was being paid \$1,000 a month to ghostwrite these Court  
 15 Orders is exactly right. It is corroborated by the  
 16 documentary evidence.  
 17 Selva Viva is an Ecuadorian company that was set  
 18 up by Donziger for one purpose, and that was to support the  
 19 Plaintiffs in the Lago Agrio Case, and Donziger himself was  
 20 the President of that company, that we have those bank  
 21 records.  
 22 Now, you can clearly see on Slide 43 the pattern  
 23 of what was occurring, and I would like to take you through  
 24 it.  
 25 October 27, 2009, Fajardo e-mails Donziger: "The

10:12 1 Mr. Racines, who was one of Chevron's Ecuadorian lawyers  
 2 which corroborates Guerra's testimony about this.  
 3 Now, when Chevron refused that bribe attempt,  
 4 Zambrano then made an arrangement with the Plaintiffs and  
 5 Guerra made his own deal with him in which he agreed that  
 6 the Plaintiffs would pay him \$1,000 a month in return for  
 7 him ghostwriting Zambrano's Orders to come out favorably to  
 8 the Plaintiffs, although occasionally throwing Chevron a  
 9 bone to avoid suspicion.  
 10 Now, Mr. Guerra's testimony about the ghostwriting  
 11 of these Court Orders is corroborated in at least five  
 12 ways: First, by the Plaintiffs' own e-mails.  
 13 When Judge Núñez was being recused in  
 14 September 2009, Fajardo sent an e-mail to Donziger, and he  
 15 said this: "I understand that Zambrano himself asked Judge  
 16 Núñez that Núñez help him with the Orders. The problem is  
 17 who will carry more weight, Núñez or Guerra?" So, in the  
 18 Chevron Case itself, the Plaintiffs were expressly  
 19 recognizing in their own e-mails that Zambrano's Orders  
 20 were going to be ghostwritten. And you can see their  
 21 mental wheels turning as to who they would prefer to be  
 22 writing those Orders: Judge Núñez, who was being recused  
 23 because of a bribery scandal, or Guerra?  
 24 Now, second, as they did with the Cabrera fraud,  
 25 the Plaintiffs again resorted to the use of code names,

10:15 1 puppeteer won't move his puppet until he's paid something."  
 2 Two days later there is a \$1,000 cash withdrawal from the  
 3 Selva Viva account, and on the same day there is \$1,000  
 4 cash deposit made into Mr. Guerra's account.  
 5 On November 26, again, there is a \$1,000 cash  
 6 withdrawal from the Selva Viva account and the next day a  
 7 \$1,000 deposit into Mr. Guerra's account. And on that same  
 8 day, Yanza e-mails Donziger, the budget is higher since we  
 9 are paying the puppeteer.  
 10 December 22nd, there is a \$1,000 cash withdrawal  
 11 from the Selva Viva account, and the next day the same  
 12 amount of money is deposited into Mr. Guerra's account, and  
 13 this time we have a signature on the deposit slip, and that  
 14 signature is of Ximena Centeno, who worked for Selva Viva.  
 15 She worked for the Plaintiffs.  
 16 So, we have here clear evidence that it was the  
 17 Plaintiffs themselves who were making these \$1,000 deposits  
 18 into Mr. Guerra's account and paying him exactly as  
 19 Mr. Guerra has testified.  
 20 On February the 4th, 2010, we see the same pattern  
 21 playing out: A \$1,000 cash withdrawal from the Selva Viva  
 22 account, and the next day a \$1,000 deposit into  
 23 Mr. Guerra's account, again by an employee of the  
 24 Plaintiff.  
 25 And this happened throughout Zambrano's first term

10:17 1 on the case, from October 2009 to February 2010, and there  
 2 was no reason for the Plaintiffs to be paying Mr. Guerra  
 3 except for him to ghostwrite Court Orders for them in the  
 4 Lago Case.  
 5 Now, fourth, we can also look at the forensic  
 6 examination of Mr. Guerra's computer. Mr. Lynch testifies  
 7 that what he found on Guerra's computer were drafts of nine  
 8 Court Orders ultimately issued by Zambrano in the Chevron  
 9 Case. These drafts pre-date--on Guerra's computer, they  
 10 pre-date the date of the issuance of the Orders later by  
 11 Zambrano, and they're clearly drafts of those Court Orders.  
 12 So, we see the forensic evidence also corroborates  
 13 Mr. Guerra's testimony.  
 14 And we can put all of this together into the  
 15 patterns with all of the documentary evidence, the TAME  
 16 Shipping records, the computer records and the bank  
 17 records. And I would like to take you through it on  
 18 Slide 45.  
 19 Now, October 2009 was the first order Zambrano  
 20 issued in the case when he took over for the first time.  
 21 That was that order on Chevron's motion to nullify all of  
 22 Judge Núñez's previous Orders. October 20th, draft Order  
 23 is last saved on Guerra's computer. The next day, Zambrano  
 24 issues an Order with text matching that found on Guerra's  
 25 draft. And on that same day, Fajardo sends an e-mail to

10:19 1 the Plaintiffs' legal team: Things here are under control.  
 2 Things are under control. They had made their deal with  
 3 Guerra and with Zambrano, and they knew how things were  
 4 going to come out. They were under control.  
 5 November 18th, a draft Order is last saved on  
 6 Guerra's computer, and the next day the TAME Shipping  
 7 records show that Guerra sent a shipment to the Lago Agrio  
 8 Courthouse, and four days later, Zambrano issued an Order  
 9 with text matching that found on Guerra's computer.  
 10 November 29, a draft Order is last saved on  
 11 Guerra's computer, the same day the TAME Shipping records  
 12 show that Guerra sent a shipment to the Lago Agrio Court,  
 13 and the next day, Zambrano issued an Order with text  
 14 matching that found on Guerra's computer. And this pattern  
 15 plays out nine times.  
 16 Now, in short, Guerra's ghostwriting of Court  
 17 Orders for Zambrano is fully corroborated by the  
 18 documentary evidence, by Guerra's computer, by the  
 19 Plaintiffs' own e-mails, by both Guerra's bank records and  
 20 the Plaintiffs' bank records and by the TAME Shipping  
 21 records.  
 22 Mr. Adam Torres, in his Expert Report, links all  
 23 of this evidence together and concludes that it's  
 24 consistent with widely recognized patterns of public  
 25 corruption, and it's notable that Mr. Torres has not been

10:20 1 called for cross-examination by Ecuador.  
 2 Now, that brings me to my fourth point, and this  
 3 is that the Plaintiffs ghostwrote the Judgment, and I will  
 4 approach this subject in three ways: First by looking at  
 5 the evidence of the bribery solicitation and the  
 6 corroborating evidence; second, we'll focus on the  
 7 Plaintiffs' documents that are indisputably copied into the  
 8 Judgment; and, finally, we will look at the credibility of  
 9 Zambrano's testimony in the RICO Case about how the  
 10 Judgment was drafted.  
 11 Now, Zambrano, as I've said, presided over the  
 12 Lago Case twice. This first one was this period  
 13 October 2009 to February 2010. At that point, Judge  
 14 Ordoñez became the President of the Court, and that meant  
 15 he also became the Presiding Judge of the Chevron Case.  
 16 But Ordoñez was recused in September 2010, and Zambrano  
 17 again, for the second time, became the Presiding Judge in  
 18 the case.  
 19 Now, when Zambrano took over the case for the  
 20 second time, the case was drawing to a close, and at this  
 21 point, Zambrano asked Guerra to solicit a bribe in return  
 22 for ghostwriting the Judgment, first from Chevron, and when  
 23 Chevron refused that offer, then from the Plaintiffs.  
 24 Again, Chevron's Ecuadorian lawyers have filed declarations  
 25 in the RICO Case that corroborate Guerra's testimony that

10:22 1 he did try to solicit a bribe from Chevron, and there is a  
 2 contemporaneous Declaration to that effect in 2010, and  
 3 that evidence is before you in this case.  
 4 Now, before going further, I want to respond to an  
 5 argument that Ecuador makes here. When they say that  
 6 Chevron could have avoided the corruption issues if it had  
 7 just reported this bribery solicitation. When making this  
 8 argument, Ecuador intentionally overlooks the obvious  
 9 context, and context which it had created, namely the  
 10 extremely hostile situation that Correa's Government  
 11 created for Chevron in this case and the unwillingness of  
 12 the Government to do anything that would help Chevron or  
 13 that would derail or even slow down the case. And the way  
 14 the Núñez bribery scandal was handled by Ecuador I think  
 15 vividly illustrates this point, and it's certainly relevant  
 16 to Chevron's actions.  
 17 Judge Núñez was caught on videotape talking to  
 18 remediation contractors about a \$3 million bribe in  
 19 exchange for remediation work to result from the Judgment.  
 20 Patricio García, who Ecuador acknowledges was a political  
 21 coordinator for Correa's party, says on this videotape that  
 22 they were acting for the Presidency, that the Government  
 23 itself was the one behind this, and that of the \$3 million  
 24 bribe, \$1 million was to go to the Judge and another  
 25 \$1 million to the Presidency.



10:24 1 Those statements provide a glimpse of what was  
 2 happening behind the scenes. Judge Núñez met with the  
 3 Parties, not once but twice, during this scheme. At the  
 4 proper time in the bribery negotiations, Judge Núñez was  
 5 brought into the room to meet with the contractors and  
 6 answer their questions. And in the course of that, he  
 7 affirmed that Chevron was guilty, that he would find them  
 8 guilty, that the damages would be huge, and that the  
 9 Judgment would be issued in a few months.

10 Chevron had nothing to do with creating these  
 11 videotapes, but when they were brought to its attention, it  
 12 reported them to the authorities in Ecuador.

13 But what happened next weren't condemnations of  
 14 the bribery scheme by the Government, but instead  
 15 Government attacks on Chevron for reporting this scheme.  
 16 President Correa called Chevron's reporting of this scandal  
 17 a desperate attempt to delay the proceedings. The Attorney  
 18 General referred to it as a scheme organized by Chevron.  
 19 The Secretary of Transparency called Chevron irresponsible  
 20 and the video recording a crime. And the Prosecutor  
 21 General himself referred to it as a trick.

22 The result of all this was that Judge Núñez, while  
 23 temporarily suspended from the bench, ultimately stayed as  
 24 a judge and even became a president of the Provincial Court  
 25 of Sucumbíos later, and the Prosecutor General in turn

10:25 1 closed the investigation requested by Chevron calling  
 2 Chevron's request "reckless and malicious" and even  
 3 threatened to investigate Chevron's lawyers.

4 So, what happened when Chevron reported this  
 5 bribery scheme is that the Government changed the focus  
 6 away from the bribery and instead focused on the  
 7 videotapes. And that way, they avoided taking any action  
 8 on the bribery itself but instead implied that it was  
 9 Chevron that had done something wrong.

10 Now, unlike the Núñez bribery scandal, Chevron had  
 11 no video or tape-recording of the Judgment bribe  
 12 solicitation, and without it, its lawyers could have been  
 13 sued for defamation or even criminally charged, and the  
 14 same could have happened to Chevron. Ecuador's Prosecutors  
 15 had already shown their willingness to bring sham criminal  
 16 charges against Chevron lawyers, and those charges were  
 17 still pending at this time. And Chevron was not aware at  
 18 that time, and certainly had no objective evidence then  
 19 that Zambrano had struck a deal with the Plaintiffs  
 20 themselves.

21 Chevron's lawyer, Adolfo Callejas, testified about  
 22 this in the Rico Case, and what he said was this: "I was  
 23 very mindful of what had happened when we filed a report  
 24 regarding the illegal activities of Judge Núñez. Instead  
 25 of having Núñez investigated, the Plaintiffs managed to

10:27 1 have him investigated, Chevron's lawyer. And he goes on to  
 2 say: "And there was no recording of the phone call. The  
 3 other person could have said it never happened. And he  
 4 could have been charged or sued with having infringed on  
 5 their honor and reputation."

6 So, who could Chevron have reported this situation  
 7 to? The Ecuadorian Government was a partisan in the case.  
 8 It had already taken strong public positions against  
 9 Chevron, and now a videotape existed suggesting that it was  
 10 the Government itself that was the one behind this. There  
 11 were no impartial authorities to report this to.

12 If Chevron thought it could have obtained relief,  
 13 it certainly would have sought it, but the Correa  
 14 Government created such a hostile environment, such a  
 15 hostile situation for Chevron, as an open enemy of the  
 16 country, in Correa's words, they're reporting the bribe  
 17 solicitation could not have helped Chevron's situation, but  
 18 quite perversely, in the Alice in Wonderland world of  
 19 Ecuador, could have only heard it.

20 But, finally, we don't have to speculate on what  
 21 would have happened if Chevron had reported it, because we  
 22 know, we can look now at what Ecuador actually did when the  
 23 evidence of the bribe and the ghostwriting came to its  
 24 attention. Now, did it arrest and prosecute Zambrano? No.  
 25 In fact, Zambrano now works for a company controlled by

10:28 1 Petroecuador and makes more than he ever did.

2 Well, did Ecuador at least stay the Judgment until  
 3 it could get to the bottom of this scheme? No, we know  
 4 that didn't happen. It did not obey your Interim Awards.

5 What actually happened is that President Correa  
 6 praised the Judgment as the most important Judgment in the  
 7 history of the country, and a year later, after all of the  
 8 evidence had come out and was public, he again praised the  
 9 Appellate Decision. He and his Government continued to  
 10 support the Plaintiffs, they viciously attacked Chevron,  
 11 and they promoted the enforcement of the Judgment as they  
 12 are still doing. So, this Government was not going to  
 13 credit Chevron's complaints or do anything that would help  
 14 derail or even slow down the case.

15 In the unique situation of this case, getting any  
 16 relief in Ecuador for Chevron was at that time and is now  
 17 futile.

18 Now, Mr. Guerra already knew Donziger and Fajardo  
 19 well from ghostwriting the Court Orders during Zambrano's  
 20 first term, but when Zambrano took over in the second term,  
 21 Guerra sent an e-mail to Donziger in which he asked  
 22 Donziger for help with his daughter in the United States on  
 23 a personal basis, but his last statement is key: "I will  
 24 support the matter of Pablo Fajardo so it will come out  
 25 soon and well." Well, the matter of Pablo Fajardo is

10:30 1 exactly the Lago Agrio Case. And we certainly know what  
 2 "come out soon and well" means now.  
 3 Because of Mr. Guerra's testimony, we now know  
 4 that after Chevron rejected the bribe solicitation, at  
 5 Zambrano's request, Guerra reached out to Fajardo and  
 6 Donziger. He called Fajardo, and Fajardo then set a  
 7 meeting at the Honey & Honey restaurant in Quito.  
 8 Attending that meeting were Guerra and, on behalf of the  
 9 Plaintiffs, Mr. Yanza, Mr. Donziger, and Mr. Fajardo.  
 10 And the only reason for them to meet with Guerra  
 11 was because they knew he represented Zambrano, and the only  
 12 thing he had to offer was to sell the Judgment through  
 13 Zambrano.  
 14 Now, at that meeting, Guerra passed on Zambrano's  
 15 proposal that the Plaintiffs pay him \$500,000 in exchange  
 16 for ghostwriting the Judgment. And Donziger, in his sworn  
 17 testimony in the RICO case, has corroborated Mr. Guerra's  
 18 testimony. He admits that, in fact, the Plaintiffs did  
 19 meet with Mr. Guerra, and he admits that at this meeting  
 20 Guerra did solicit a \$500,000 bribe in exchange for fixing  
 21 the case.  
 22 Where they differ is on the result. Guerra says  
 23 that Donziger told him they regretted it but they just  
 24 didn't have the money at that point in time. Donziger says  
 25 he rejected the bribe outright. But Guerra has testified

10:31 1 that Zambrano later told him that he worked out a deal with  
 2 Fajardo, with Zambrano agreeing to pay the  
 3 Plaintiffs--excuse me, with Zambrano agreeing to allow the  
 4 Plaintiffs to ghostwrite the Judgment in return for  
 5 \$500,000 to be paid out of the Judgment's proceeds.  
 6 Now, we know that this bribe solicitation to the  
 7 Plaintiffs occurred. Donziger has admitted it in his RICO  
 8 testimony. But what did the Plaintiffs do after that bribe  
 9 solicitation occurred? Well, did they report it to the  
 10 authorities? No, we know that didn't happen. Donziger has  
 11 admitted in his testimony they didn't report it. What they  
 12 actually did, after Guerra had solicited this bribe, is  
 13 that Fajardo approached Guerra about being an expert  
 14 witness for them in the RICO case in New York on the  
 15 integrity of the judicial system in Ecuador. That's what  
 16 they did. And Donziger admitted in his RICO testimony that  
 17 he was aware that that approach took place.  
 18 So, the Plaintiffs certainly weren't outraged by  
 19 this bribe solicitation. They later reached out to Guerra  
 20 to be an expert for them.  
 21 Now, there were compelling reasons why the  
 22 Plaintiffs had to ghostwrite the Judgment. They had many  
 23 problems in the case and they had to take care exactly what  
 24 the Judgment said. Zambrano clearly wasn't up to the task  
 25 of writing this Judgment either by training or experience.

10:33 1 He had to have Guerra help him with even routine civil  
 2 Orders. And having made so many deals with the devil  
 3 already, the Plaintiffs couldn't leave the most important  
 4 part of the case, the Judgment, to chance. They needed to  
 5 control the contents of the Judgment.  
 6 First, because now that the Cabrera fraud was  
 7 publicly exposed and they couldn't deny it, they needed to  
 8 ensure that the Judgment would not expressly rely on the  
 9 Cabrera Reports because that would endanger the enforcement  
 10 of the Judgment abroad. The purpose of the cleansing  
 11 experts was to use the Cabrera Reports but in a disguised  
 12 form, so they needed to draft the Judgment very carefully  
 13 to obfuscate its reliance on Cabrera.  
 14 Second, they also needed control because they had  
 15 sued the wrong party. As Donziger himself had said, at one  
 16 time expressly, that they sued the wrong party in Chevron.  
 17 But now with the Judgment coming up they had to provide  
 18 some justification for how they could prevail against  
 19 Chevron. So what they did was to turn to their own  
 20 internal documents which they had before them in drafting  
 21 the merger section of the Judgment. They turned to the  
 22 Fusion Memo and the Erion Memo, their own internal memos  
 23 which were never filed with the Court, and they used those  
 24 to carefully draft that part of the Judgment.  
 25 Third, they had a major problem with causation

10:35 1 because of Petroecuador's operations and the fact they  
 2 didn't sue it and couldn't sue it because of their quid pro  
 3 quo agreement with the Government. So they needed to write  
 4 the Judgment in order to justify a decision against only  
 5 Chevron and to ignore Petroecuador's impacts.  
 6 Fourth, in order to pressure Chevron, they also  
 7 wanted to control the amount of the damages and the  
 8 allocation of those damages, and we can see the Plaintiffs'  
 9 fingerprints very clearly in this Judgment in the  
 10 \$8.5 billion punitive damage award, which they inserted as  
 11 their bargaining tool. They put that in, conditioned on a  
 12 public apology which would have effectively meant an  
 13 admission. So, they put that in the Judgment as the  
 14 Plaintiffs' own bargaining tool to pressure Chevron.  
 15 And finally, they needed to make sure that the  
 16 money would go into a trust so that they could assure their  
 17 funders the money wouldn't all disappear.  
 18 Now, it's telling that when Donziger was asked the  
 19 question in the RICO case whether the Plaintiffs prepared a  
 20 proposed Judgment, he evaded the question. In 12 words he  
 21 gave three different answers: "I don't believe so. I  
 22 don't know. It's possible." Now, that's not an answer,  
 23 it's an obfuscation. It's a Richard Nixon-type answer. He  
 24 knew the real answer--he knew the real answer--but he was  
 25 trying to fudge it, but at the end he gave it away. "It's

10:36 1 possible." Well, in fact, it's more than possible. The  
2 Plaintiffs' fingerprints are all over the Judgment, and I  
3 would like to move now to that issue.

4 At least nine of the Plaintiffs' internal  
5 documents were used in drafting the Judgment. The list is  
6 on Slide 57 before you, and none of those documents were  
7 ever filed in the Court record.

8 Now, it's likely that the Plaintiffs used more of  
9 their own documents in drafting the Judgment, but we never  
10 obtained access to Mr. Fajardo's computer or his documents  
11 or those of the other Plaintiffs' Ecuadorian lawyers for  
12 the Plaintiffs, Mr. Yanza, Mr. Sáenz, or Mr. Prieto. Those  
13 documents were subpoenaed in the RICO case, but Fajardo ran  
14 to an Ecuadorian court, got an order blocking access to  
15 those documents and they were never revealed and never  
16 produced in the RICO case.

17 Now, as I noted earlier, Ecuador itself does not  
18 take issue with the fact that the Judgment relies on at  
19 least three of these Plaintiffs' documents in preparing the  
20 Judgment: The Fusion Memo, the Clapp Report, and the Selva  
21 Viva Database.

22 Now, the next slide is the three pages of the  
23 Judgment that I showed you earlier, Pages 20, 21, and 24,  
24 and what you see is that the highlighted words are words  
25 that were taken verbatim from the Plaintiffs' own Fusion

10:39 1 And the next one is from the Fajardo Trust e-mail  
2 which is copied on the left into Page 186 of the Judgment,  
3 which is the Trust section. The highlighted words are  
4 words copied verbatim from that e-mail.

5 And I might add that the Fajardo e-mail and the  
6 Judgment contain the same idiosyncratic case citations and  
7 word choices.

8 Now, the Judgment also contains identical mistakes  
9 as those made in the Plaintiffs' own internal documents.  
10 What you see here is from the Plaintiffs' Index Summary,  
11 and you'll see the Court Record on the left with certain  
12 page numbers, for example, then the Plaintiffs' June Index  
13 Summary makes certain mistakes. It gets the page numbers  
14 wrong at various--in various places--614 instead of 612, et  
15 cetera--and at one point it puts a spurious accent mark in  
16 the word "ambientales," quite improperly.

17 But what you see is that the Plaintiffs' documents  
18 were making mistakes as compared to the Court Record, but  
19 then the Judgment copies exactly those same mistakes into  
20 the Judgment, showing that the Judgment was again copying  
21 from the Plaintiffs' documents. This, again, I think is  
22 evidence that the Plaintiffs were cutting and pasting from  
23 their own documents in the Judgment.

24 Now, the Judgment also copies extensively from the  
25 Plaintiffs' internal Selva Viva Database--that is an Excel

10:38 1 Memo.

2 Now, on the next slide, you see a split screen of  
3 Page 5 of the Fusion Memo and Page 21 of the Judgment. And  
4 I would like for you in particular to note on the left-hand  
5 side of the screen at bottom, the footnote, Footnote 12 of  
6 the Fusion Memo. The Judgment itself did not use  
7 footnotes, so the footnotes were put into the body of the  
8 Judgment. But note this footnote. There is an  
9 out-of-order numbering sequence, with the Number 6964 out  
10 of order, and in the footnote there is also a perfectly  
11 proper period at the end of it.

12 But watch what happens when the footnote gets put  
13 into the body of the Judgment. You see that the Judgment  
14 now copies verbatim, including the out-of-order numbering  
15 sequence that we had seen in the footnote, but also the  
16 period that was at the end of the footnote is now put into  
17 the middle of a sentence in the Judgment and is quite  
18 incorrect. It's a spurious period at this point, creating  
19 two sentence fragments.

20 But what we see here is clear evidence that the  
21 Plaintiffs were cutting and pasting from their own  
22 documents into the Judgment.

23 Now, the next slide shows you on the left the  
24 Clapp Report and the same words were copied into the  
25 Judgment.

10:41 1 spreadsheet that the Plaintiffs used--and there are over  
2 100 examples--about 100 examples--of the Judgment copying  
3 from this database. But since Ecuador admits that, I'm  
4 only going to give you one example. And this is an example  
5 of certain filed Lab Results that for certain samples show  
6 those Lab Results as being in micrograms per kilogram. But  
7 for exactly those same samples, the Selva Viva Database  
8 makes a mistake. It lists them incorrectly as being in  
9 milligrams per kilogram. And then, for exactly those same  
10 samples, the Judgment makes exactly the same mistake  
11 because it's copying from the Selva Viva Database.

12 As I said, there are about 100 examples of this in  
13 the Judgment, but since it's essentially admitted, I'm only  
14 going to give the one for now in the interest of time.

15 Now, another of the Plaintiffs' documents that the  
16 Judgment relies on is the Moodie Memo. Moodie, Nick  
17 Moodie, was an Australian intern who worked for the  
18 Plaintiffs and he wrote a causation memo discussing  
19 Australian and U.S. tort causation law, and this is another  
20 of the Plaintiffs' fingerprints in the Judgment.

21 Professor Michael Green, who is the reporter for  
22 the U.S. restatement of torts, has compared the Moodie Memo  
23 to the Judgment, and he's concluded that it's highly  
24 unlikely that the Judgment was prepared independently of  
25 the Moodie Memo for three reasons: First, because of the

10:43 1 same foreign law that they both address in the causation  
2 section; second, because of the same idiosyncratic choice  
3 of which U.S. law to address in both documents; and, third,  
4 because of the same mistakes that are common to both  
5 documents.

6 Now, the next slide shows you a chart of some of  
7 the commonalities between the Moodie Memo on the left and  
8 the Judgment on the right, and you will see virtually  
9 exactly the same legal propositions asserting to the same  
10 law in both documents, and this was one of the things that  
11 Professor Green was relying upon.

12 But Professor Green did not have all of the  
13 evidence at that time. Because since his Report, we have  
14 now found in the forensic examination of Zambrano's  
15 computer a December 21 Providencias--Providencias being a  
16 draft of the Judgment about the--as of December 21, it had  
17 about the first 107 pages of the Judgment.

18 But what we see now is clear evidence of copying  
19 from the Moodie Memo. You see, for example, that the  
20 Moodie Memo in its discussion of substantial factor cites  
21 to two U.S. cases: Whitley versus Philip-Morris and  
22 Rutherford versus Owens Illinois. Well, those cases are  
23 not in the Court Record. Mr. Juola has testified to that.  
24 In this Providencias, found on Mr. Zambrano's computer as  
25 of December 21, you see a discussion of the substantial

10:44 1 factor test, and what does it do? It cites to exactly the  
2 two same U.S. cases as are cited in the Moodie Memo.

3 And as I said, this is one of the important  
4 discoveries to come out of the forensic examination of  
5 Zambrano's computers, and we find from it that there was  
6 another of the Plaintiffs' documents that was copied into  
7 the Judgment, and that was the Erion Memo.

8 That memo cites--discusses certain legal  
9 propositions and cites in support of those propositions  
10 nine U.S. authorities. And those same legal propositions  
11 and those same nine U.S. citations in precisely the same  
12 form are found in the December 21 Providencias on  
13 Zambrano's computer. And you see one example, on Slide 67,  
14 patent injustice citing to the Penn Central Securities case  
15 with the same cite, and the manifest injustice citing to  
16 the Acushnet River case with an incomplete citation, but  
17 you see the same incomplete citation in both documents,  
18 although the Providencias never gives the full citation for  
19 that case.

20 On the next slide you see exactly the same pattern  
21 playing out with two more cases being cited in support of  
22 certain legal propositions in the Erion Memo, and for  
23 exactly the same propositions, those same two U.S. cases in  
24 exactly the same form are cited in the Providencias on  
25 Zambrano's computer.

10:46 1 So, what is Ecuador's response to all of this  
2 evidence? Well, Ecuador speculates that the documents, or  
3 at least some of them, just must have been filed but the  
4 Court clerk was just incompetent. It was just sloppy  
5 recordkeeping, they said. That's their defense.

6 Well, Dr. Patrick Juola, a professor at Duquesne  
7 University, performed an electronic search of the record.  
8 He checked the quality of the record, and he found it to be  
9 generally excellent. Where there were any issues, he  
10 performed a page by page hand search with two people  
11 working independently. He also searched the 69 CDs of the  
12 Court Record that went up on appeal, and his analysis  
13 confirmed that the Plaintiffs' internal documents, which  
14 are copied in the Judgment, the ones I've been talking  
15 about, are not found in the Court Record.

16 Independently, Mr. Samuel Hernandez of Morningside  
17 Translations, also conducted a hand review of the parts of  
18 the Court Record where you would logically expect to find  
19 any of these documents, such as in the Plaintiffs' own  
20 filings, but he also confirmed that the Plaintiffs' work  
21 product is not found in the record.

22 Now, very importantly, Ecuador itself has had full  
23 access to the Court Record, and if any of these documents  
24 were found in the Court Record over the last three years,  
25 they certainly would have called them to your attention.

10:48 1 But they haven't. Ecuador has failed to identify any of  
2 these documents anywhere in the Court Record, and they have  
3 not pointed you to any place where you can find them. And  
4 none of the RICO Defendants pointed in that case to where  
5 any of these documents could be found in the record.

6 Now, that hasn't prevented Ecuador from  
7 speculating, however, that, for example, the Fusion Memo  
8 was filed. There were some e-mails early on that indicated  
9 the Plaintiffs might file that document, but as the  
10 judicial inspection approached at which they were going to  
11 discuss with the Court the merger issue, Donziger sent  
12 several e-mails to another the Ecuadorian--another of the  
13 Ecuadorian lawyers, Juan Pablo Sáenz, insisting that Sáenz  
14 give him a list of every merger document to be filed at the  
15 inspection, and the word "every" was capitalized as an  
16 emphasis by Donziger. He wanted a list of every document  
17 they were going to file. And in response, he got that  
18 list, and that list lists every single document that they  
19 intended to file, and it does not include the Fusión Memo,  
20 and there is no dispute about that.

21 And we also have the Court's list of the documents  
22 it received at that judicial inspection, and there is no  
23 dispute that the Court's own list of the documents received  
24 does not include the Fusion Memo. So, we have both sides,  
25 what the Plaintiffs intended to file and what the Court

10:49 1 received, and the Fusion Memo is not in there.  
 2 Now, Ecuador suggests, however, that perhaps the  
 3 judge was just informally shown the document or read the  
 4 document. But we know that didn't happen, because Zambrano  
 5 wasn't the Presiding Judge at this judicial inspection. In  
 6 fact, he wasn't the Presiding Judge at any of the judicial  
 7 inspections. They had already concluded before he became  
 8 the Presiding Judge, so we know that Zambrano could not  
 9 have been handed, shown or read the Fusion Memo in this  
 10 way.  
 11 Now, Ecuador also speculates that the Clapp Report  
 12 surely must have been filed. And, again, there were  
 13 e-mails from the Plaintiffs suggesting that they might file  
 14 it at one time. But when Cabrera was appointed as the  
 15 global expert in March of 2007, the Plaintiffs changed  
 16 their plans, and we can see it very clearly, because what  
 17 the Plaintiffs did was they used the Clapp Report in  
 18 drafting Annex K to the Cabrera Reports, but now having  
 19 used the Clapp Report in drafting the Cabrera Reports, they  
 20 couldn't very well file the Clapp Report into the Court  
 21 Record without revealing the Cabrera ghostwriting scheme.  
 22 And as I've said, nobody has found the Clapp Report  
 23 anywhere in the Court Record, not Mr. Hernandez, not  
 24 Mr. Juola, and not Ecuador itself.  
 25 Now, Ecuador also claims that the Fajardo e-mails

10:51 1 in December 2010 and January 2011 show that the Plaintiffs  
 2 didn't know when the Judgment was going to be issued and  
 3 thus couldn't have ghostwritten the Judgment. But this  
 4 explanation just exalts substance over form--excuse me,  
 5 exalts pretense over substance--and ignores the evidence in  
 6 this case. Fajardo knew very well that the Judgment wasn't  
 7 going to rely on the Plaintiffs' alegatos because he was  
 8 already drafting the Judgment when he was sending these  
 9 e-mails.  
 10 The first of Fajardo's e-mails that Ecuador points  
 11 you to is dated December 17, 2010. But now, with the  
 12 Zambrano hard drive examination, forensic examination, we  
 13 have this December 21, 2010 Providencias found on  
 14 Zambrano's computers, only four days after Fajardo had sent  
 15 that e-mail. And what we see is that it was already  
 16 copying from six--at least six of the Plaintiffs' internal  
 17 documents.  
 18 But the Plaintiffs still needed to file the  
 19 alegatos as a matter of form before the Judgment was  
 20 issued. So, Fajardo, in the e-mails, was exhorting his  
 21 team to finish the alegatos as soon as they can, but he  
 22 couldn't tell the non-core team members that the fix was  
 23 in. And by late 2010, when he sent these e-mails, Fajardo  
 24 already knew very well that the e-mails might be subpoenaed  
 25 in the United States, especially for U.S. team members.

10:53 1 That had already happened with Donziger and with Stratus,  
 2 and other 1782s were already filed and proceeding in the  
 3 United States at that time.  
 4 And very importantly, all of Fajardo's e-mails to  
 5 which Ecuador points included either American members of  
 6 the team who were recipients of those e-mails or very  
 7 junior members of the team, but they weren't core members  
 8 of that team.  
 9 The Federal Court in the RICO case noted this fact  
 10 very expressly, saying that all of these e-mails went to  
 11 non-core members of the team in saying there is no reason  
 12 to believe that any of the core three--Fajardo, Donziger  
 13 and Yanza--would have confided the fact that they had  
 14 bribed Zambrano to any of the other recipients of the  
 15 e-mails, and noting that this trio had a long record of  
 16 keeping knowledge of questionable behavior as close to  
 17 their personal vests as possible.  
 18 Now, by contrast, when there was truly sensitive  
 19 information involved, Fajardo included only the core team  
 20 members, as in these three e-mails which were confined to  
 21 Fajardo, Donziger, and Yanza, and these e-mails are e-mails  
 22 where they were discussing ghostwriting the Judgment.  
 23 So, in short, the Fajardo e-mails aren't proof of  
 24 anything except that Fajardo and Donziger played it close  
 25 to the vest when important information about questionable

10:54 1 conduct was involved, and these e-mails certainly don't  
 2 explain or wash away the clear evidence that the  
 3 Plaintiffs' unfiled documents were used in drafting the  
 4 Judgment.  
 5 Now, Ecuador's defense to all of this, as I said,  
 6 is just sloppy recordkeeping by the clerk, but that is not  
 7 a defense under Ecuadorian law. Dr. Velázquez, in his  
 8 Report, says that, under Ecuadorian law, documents must be  
 9 filed to have any procedural or evidentiary value in a  
 10 case, the normal rule you would find in any Court system.  
 11 And he goes on to say that a judge may not base a judgment  
 12 in Ecuador on a document that's not included in the record.  
 13 That would illegitimize the judgment and should result in  
 14 its nullity. And I might note that Dr. Velázquez has not  
 15 been called for cross-examination by Ecuador.  
 16 Now, that brings me to my fifth point, which  
 17 relates to Zambrano's testimony in the RICO case. Zambrano  
 18 testified there that the Judgment--this judgment--was the  
 19 largest and most significant decision of his career. In  
 20 fact, we know that's true because it's the largest decision  
 21 in the history of Ecuador by many factors.  
 22 And he says he spent months working on it. And he  
 23 says he wrote every word of this judgment himself with no  
 24 help from anyone else. That was his testimony. And the  
 25 day after the Judgment was issued, Zambrano appeared at a

10:56 1 press conference with the head of the Judicial Council who  
2 called him a shining star, and I will let him--his words  
3 speak for themselves.

4 (Video played.)

5 MR. BISHOP: But despite the significance of this  
6 judgment to him, when Zambrano was asked at the RICO trial  
7 if he had any documents--any documents whatsoever--showing  
8 that he authored the Judgment, he had to answer "no."

9 Now, he says he had made notes, but he says he  
10 threw those notes away about a year later, even though he  
11 knew Chevron was appealing the Judgment, and even though  
12 he knew Chevron was claiming that the Judgment was  
13 ghostwritten, he cavalierly tossed his notes away. So, he  
14 has no documents evidencing that he wrote the Judgment.

15 And when he was asked about the contents of the  
16 Judgment, he couldn't answer even the basics. He was  
17 asked the very simple question of what theory of causation  
18 was adopted by the Judgment. Well, despite a several page  
19 discussion of this topic in the Judgment, he didn't know  
20 the answer.

21 He was asked what the English word "workover"  
22 means which appears in the Judgment twice. He didn't  
23 know--perhaps because that word was taken, was cut and  
24 pasted verbatim from the Fusion Memo by the Plaintiffs  
25 themselves.

10:59 1 But we know that testimony is false, and Ecuador  
2 itself admits that that testimony is wrong. Zambrano  
3 indicated he started drafting the Judgment in  
4 mid-November 2010, but the new computer wasn't even  
5 purchased until November 26th, and it wasn't activated  
6 until December the 7th. And from then until the Judgment  
7 was issued on February 14th, 2011, Microsoft Word was only  
8 open on the new computer for a total of 36 hours, not  
9 nearly enough time to draft the Judgment. So, Zambrano's  
10 repeated and insistent testimony that the Judgment was  
11 drafted only on the new computer is demonstrably false.

12 Now, Zambrano also testified that he personally  
13 hired an 18-year-old recent graduate, Evelyn Calva, to  
14 type the Judgment. He didn't use any of the court  
15 secretaries with the Court. He says he personally hired  
16 her, he personally paid her, and she worked only on the  
17 Chevron Case. He testified that he dictated almost every  
18 word of the Judgment to her, about 85 percent, and never  
19 handed her a document to type from. It was all done by  
20 dictation.

21 And he also testified that the remarkable  
22 Ms. Calva, 18 years old, did legal research for him and  
23 did legal research in foreign law, and that she's the one  
24 who found the U.S., English, and Australian case law  
25 discussed in the Judgment, and she found it on the

10:57 1 He was asked what the term "TPH" means which is  
2 used in the Judgment 41 times, but he couldn't answer  
3 beyond saying it has something to do with hydrocarbons.

4 Well, Ecuador suggests that, well, maybe he was  
5 just confused because the proper acronym in Spanish is  
6 "HTP" and not "TPH," but this only proves the point,  
7 because the original Spanish version of the Judgment  
8 doesn't use the Spanish acronym "HTP." It uses the  
9 English acronym "TPH," and it uses it 41 times.

10 So, if Zambrano was confused about this as  
11 Ecuador says, it's because he didn't draft the Judgment.

12 And it's remarkable that Zambrano, if he did  
13 draft the Judgment, wouldn't know the term TPH, because  
14 this was precisely the term that was the basis for the  
15 largest damage award in the Judgment: The \$5.4 billion  
16 for soil remediation. \$5.4 billion was awarded precisely  
17 to clean up TPH, so it was of real significance in the  
18 Judgment.

19 Now, Zambrano also testified that the Judgment  
20 was drafted only on the new computer in his office, and,  
21 in fact, he repeated that testimony several times, and he  
22 was quite insistent on it. He even drew a map of his  
23 office, noted where the new computer was located, and said  
24 that his typist sat only there and only typed the Judgment  
25 only on the new computer. He was very clear about that.

11:01 1 internet.

2 Now, I ask you: Is it plausible that the foreign  
3 law cases discussed in the Judgment were found on the  
4 internet, as Zambrano testified, by his 18-year-old  
5 assistant? Could you do legal research in a foreign  
6 language and on a foreign legal system which you don't  
7 know and could you have done it when you were 18 years  
8 old? I know I certainly couldn't. But the evidence is  
9 clearly inconsistent with Ms. Calva having done any of  
10 this.

11 First, Ecuador isn't bringing Ms. Calva to  
12 testify in this Hearing to corroborate Zambrano's  
13 testimony.

14 Second, there is no evidence whatsoever that she  
15 had any training or experience in doing legal research,  
16 much less in foreign law, or that she had the language  
17 skills in English and French to do so.

18 And, third, the forensic evidence on Zambrano's  
19 computer is inconsistent with his testimony.

20 And fourth, we can compare the Judgment again  
21 with the Plaintiffs' internal Moodie Memo and see plainly  
22 that the Judgment closely tracks that memo of the  
23 Plaintiffs, its legal propositions and the U.S. case law  
24 that it cites.

25 So, what's more plausible? That the 18-year-old

11:02 1 Ms. Calva did legal research in foreign law on the  
2 internet and just happened to find exactly the same cases  
3 that were cited by the Plaintiffs in their unfiled  
4 documents? Or that the Plaintiffs themselves ghostwrote  
5 the Judgment with their own documents in front of them?  
6 And is it plausible--is it plausible--that

7 Ms. Calva just happened to type from Zambrano's dictation  
8 the same identical mistakes that are found in the  
9 Plaintiffs' unfiled documents?  
10 Now, the timing of Zambrano's testimony in the  
11 RICO case is also suspect. Judge Zambrano was dismissed  
12 as a judge in February 2012 for "inexcusable judicial  
13 error revealing notorious ineptitude or carelessness in  
14 the administration of justice." Now, he was dismissed  
15 because he released a high-profile--a major drug  
16 trafficker in a high-profile national police action--he  
17 released him from custody, and he was clearly suspected of  
18 corruption, of having accepted a bribe, but he was found  
19 guilty expressly of the inexcusable judicial error.

20 Well, he was also found guilty in a second  
21 incident and dismissed for, again, for inexcusable  
22 judicial error, for arbitrary action, totally contrary to  
23 the provisions of express legal rules. Yet this is the  
24 judge that Ecuador tells you wrote every word of the  
25 188-page Judgment.

11:04 1 Now, Zambrano also had a history when he was a  
2 prosecutor of soliciting bribes. There are many  
3 complaints in the file from individuals, from attorneys  
4 accusing him of soliciting bribes as a prosecutor. One of  
5 those was a petition filed by 41 people in 2006, just two  
6 years before he became a judge. And this is what they  
7 said: "Our collective indignation is based not only on  
8 events that occurred recently, but also because we have  
9 become aware of a number of irregular and reprehensible  
10 acts of Zambrano, who has been unable to maintain an  
11 honorable track record as a public official, but has made  
12 his professional career by a path of extortion, blackmail  
13 and shame." That's what they said about him.

14 We also know that in 2004, the Napo Bar  
15 Association itself requested that the Prosecutor General  
16 suspend Zambrano for soliciting bribes. And we also know  
17 that when he was considered for judgeship, the national  
18 police certified that Zambrano had been arrested twice for  
19 theft.

20 Now, after being dismissed as a judge, Zambrano  
21 was then unemployed for a year, until he signed the  
22 Declaration in the RICO case in March of 2013. Just a  
23 month after that, he was then invited to a new job as a  
24 legal advisor to the Refinery of the Pacific, a large  
25 company, a major investment of Petroecuador and a company

11:06 1 controlled by Petroecuador, the national oil company of  
2 Ecuador. So, you can see that he was hired to this new  
3 position with--for a company of Petroecuador only a month  
4 after giving his RICO Declaration.

5 But at the RICO Hearing, it was interesting that  
6 Zambrano didn't even know the basics about his new  
7 employer. He had never visited the company's website and  
8 he didn't even know he had an e-mail address there.

9 And what was--you're undoubtedly going to ask,  
10 what was Zambrano's explanation for how these Plaintiffs'  
11 documents got copied into the Judgment? Well, this is  
12 from his RICO Declaration, Paragraph 16, and this is what  
13 he said: "I should mention that occasionally documents  
14 related to the case that were not incorporated into the  
15 process were left at the door to my office at the Court.  
16 This was relevant information that, as I read it, I  
17 realized it could be of use in my decision." That's his  
18 apparent explanation. He's saying he nontransparently and  
19 ex parte accepted unfiled documents and used them in  
20 drafting the Judgment.

21 Now, he tried to clean up this testimony by  
22 saying, well, he matched up the information in the  
23 documents to the record. He doesn't say he matched up the  
24 documents themselves. He says he matched up the  
25 information in them. But we know it's demonstrably untrue

11:07 1 for those Plaintiffs' documents that were copied into the  
2 Judgment.

3 But if this Declaration is correct, if his  
4 explanation is correct, that's a violation of Ecuadorian  
5 law. But, quite frankly, it's just not plausible. What's  
6 far more plausible is that the Plaintiffs themselves  
7 ghostwrote the Judgment using their own documents which  
8 they had before them.

9 And the Federal Court in the RICO case rejected  
10 Zambrano's testimony. It found that his testimony was  
11 unpersuasive for a host of reasons, among which were the  
12 many inconsistencies in it, and finding that Zambrano was  
13 a remarkably unpersuasive witness. Unfortunately, he  
14 won't be here this week so you can see exactly the same  
15 thing that the RICO Court saw.

16 Now, I would like to turn quickly to my final  
17 point--I think my time is starting to run short--and my  
18 final point is that the appellate courts abdicated their  
19 responsibility to review the fraudulent conduct.

20 Former Minister Álvarez, in his three Expert  
21 Reports which you have before you in this case--and  
22 Mr. Álvarez also has not been called for cross-examination  
23 by Ecuador--but in his three Reports he has chronicled the  
24 events of the Ecuadorian judiciary since the Correa  
25 administration took power. Since then, that

11:08 1 administration has purged the Constitutional Court, has  
 2 twice replaced the judges on the National Court of  
 3 Justice, and also the members of the Judicial Council.  
 4 And the administration's own statistics for only an  
 5 18-month period show that they had dismissed 442 judges  
 6 and suspended 334 judges. And, in fact, if we take into  
 7 account all of the judges that were sanctioned in that  
 8 18-month period, it's well over half of the judges in  
 9 Ecuador. As one news editorial said, those statistics  
 10 show either widespread incompetence in the judiciary or  
 11 political tampering with the judiciary, or both.  
 12 Now, you have seen this next slide before in an  
 13 earlier Hearing. This shows just a few of the many cases  
 14 in which the Correa administration has dismissed or  
 15 suspended judges for the rulings in specific cases in  
 16 which Correa took an interest. And we know that Correa  
 17 has taken a specific interest in the Lago Agrio Case, not  
 18 only endorsing the Plaintiffs' case, but also endorsing  
 19 the Judgment as the most important judgment in the history  
 20 of the country, and also endorsing the Appellate Decision.  
 21 Now, former Minister Álvarez has given the  
 22 opinion that in the context of President Correa's efforts  
 23 to control the courts, the Ecuadorian judiciary is not  
 24 independent in cases in which the Executive takes an  
 25 interest, and the Southern District of New York in the

11:10 1 RICO case found the same thing.  
 2 Now, Ecuador suggests that it's just Mr. Álvarez  
 3 saying this, but it's not. Many former members of  
 4 Ecuador's judiciary have publicly noted the lack of  
 5 judicial independence during the Correa administration. A  
 6 former Justice of the Supreme Court and former President  
 7 of the Inter-American Court of Human Rights is one of  
 8 them.  
 9 Another, in the second bullet point, is Carlos  
 10 Estarellas. Now, Ecuador keeps referring you to their  
 11 judicial reforms and they keep trumpeting their 2005  
 12 judicial reform over and over. But this is the man who  
 13 was the Chairman of the Special Committee that selected  
 14 the numbers of the Supreme Court in that reform, but this  
 15 is what he's saying now in 2010 during the Correa  
 16 administration: "The great misfortune of justice is that  
 17 political interests are not resigned to have no  
 18 interference in the courts. In Ecuador, I do not see the  
 19 principle of independence, as contemplated in the  
 20 Constitution, is being complied with."  
 21 Now, you don't have to go so far as to find a  
 22 general lack of independence of the judiciary in Ecuador.  
 23 Our point is that in the specific circumstances of this  
 24 case, with President Correa and his Government making the  
 25 Lago Agrio Case into a national cause, with them calling

11:12 1 Chevron an open enemy of the country, Chevron could not  
 2 get a fair trial in Ecuador, and that's as far as you or  
 3 we need to go.  
 4 Now, against this background, the Lago Agrio  
 5 Judgment was appealed, but the Appellate Court, whose  
 6 Constitution was manipulated, abdicated its constitutional  
 7 duty to review the allegations of fraud and corruption and  
 8 to correct the wrongdoing. And the National Court of  
 9 Justice followed exactly the same pattern: Despite its  
 10 constitutional duties, it also refused to look at the  
 11 evidence of fraud and corruption.  
 12 Now, since then, despite at least 12 letters from  
 13 Chevron requesting investigations over the past six years  
 14 of this pattern of fraud and corruption, the Government  
 15 has done nothing of substance. No one has been charged,  
 16 and no one has been punished.  
 17 And, in fact, since the Judgment was issued,  
 18 President Correa and the Government have stepped up their  
 19 attacks on Chevron and strongly supported the Judgment.  
 20 In almost every weekly national radio address, President  
 21 Correa supports the Plaintiffs, the Judgment, and attacks  
 22 Chevron very strongly. In fact, during a very critical  
 23 stage of the enforcement proceedings for the Judgment in  
 24 Argentina, President Correa flew to Buenos Aires, he met  
 25 with the President of Argentina, and he told the press,

11:13 1 "of course we're going to support our citizens and try to  
 2 ensure that the court ruling is complied with."  
 3 I would also point you to the fact that the  
 4 Foreign Ministry has conducted many meetings abroad  
 5 through the embassies, again attacking Chevron and  
 6 supporting the Judgment, and the Foreign Ministry has even  
 7 published a pamphlet, after your Interim Awards were  
 8 published, calling the Lago Agrio Judgment "the first big  
 9 triumph" and declaring that the Judgment is enforceable  
 10 everywhere in the world. And Ecuador's Foreign Ministry,  
 11 on the instructions of President Correa, has made this a  
 12 matter of first priority for the foreign policy of the  
 13 country, and I will let you hear that directly from the  
 14 Foreign Minister.  
 15 (Video played.)  
 16 MR. BISHOP: With the case as a matter of first  
 17 priority of Ecuador's foreign policy, then that means it's  
 18 a matter of national interest, and it's a matter of  
 19 government policy. And all of this has been done by the  
 20 Government, it continues to be done in violation of the  
 21 Interim Awards that you have issued.  
 22 With that, I will end my part of the  
 23 presentation, and I'm going to turn the floor over to  
 24 Mr. Coriell, but I suspect that all of us probably need a  
 25 break at this point.



11:15 1 Thank you, Mr. President.  
 2 PRESIDENT VEEDER: I think you guessed right.  
 3 Let's have a 15-minute break, which is not more  
 4 than 15 minutes, and we will resume with Mr. Coriell.  
 5 (Brief recess.)  
 6 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Let's resume.  
 7 Mr. Coriell, you have the floor.  
 8 MR. CORIELL: Thank you, Mr. President.  
 9 Members of the Tribunal, you've seen from  
 10 Mr. Bishop the Judgment fraud this morning, and now I'd  
 11 like to take a look at the Judgment itself, not for mere  
 12 error, not as an appellate court would do, but at the  
 13 egregious substantive holdings that show that in the words  
 14 of Mr. Fitzmaurice, no honest and competent Court could  
 15 have made them.  
 16 And I want to focus on the three most egregious  
 17 legal absurdities in the Judgment. We've briefed a series  
 18 of them, but I want to talk first about how the Judgment  
 19 ignores and, in fact, breaches, to take you back to the  
 20 Track 1 issues, the Settlement and Release Agreements.  
 21 Number 2, how it ignores the basic tort element  
 22 of causation, a requirement in any legal system for Civil  
 23 Liability, and third, how it ignores Ecuadorian principles  
 24 of corporate separateness.  
 25 So, legal absurdity Number 1, relating to the

11:31 1 Release Agreements.  
 2 And you'll recall, of course, your Track 1 Award  
 3 from a little over a year ago, and I've put the operative  
 4 language on the screen at Slide 106. It's from  
 5 Paragraph 112, Section 3, where you said that "the scope  
 6 of the Releases" does not extend to "any environmental  
 7 claim made by an individual"--and here you gave the  
 8 standard--"for personal harm in respect of that  
 9 individual's rights separate and different" from  
 10 Ecuador's.  
 11 And you went on to say, though, that it does have  
 12 legal effect under Ecuadorian law to preclude any diffuse  
 13 claim under Article 19.2, whether it's made by Ecuador or  
 14 by an individual not claiming, and here that language is  
 15 again, "personal harm actual or threatened."  
 16 So, two key holdings here that we can key off of  
 17 from your Award. The first is that diffuse claims under  
 18 Article 19.2, which is the constitutional provision giving  
 19 a right to a clean environment, are barred; and the second  
 20 is that the standard for whether a claim is diffuse or  
 21 individual for determining whether it's barred under these  
 22 releases is personal harm. You say it twice here: An  
 23 individual complaint as opposed to a diffuse complaint  
 24 must allege personal harm, and an individual Judgment as  
 25 opposed to a diffuse Judgment must vindicate personal harm

11:32 1 with personal harm findings.  
 2 Well, the Lago Agrio Judgment, we submit, has no  
 3 personal harm findings. It vindicates only diffuse  
 4 claims, claims that you held are barred by the Releases,  
 5 and we can see this first by looking at the Plaintiffs'  
 6 own words. My colleague's passing around what was an  
 7 appendix to our Track 1B Reply Memorial in January of  
 8 2014, which contains the series of statements by the  
 9 Plaintiffs, by Ecuador in this arbitration and Court  
 10 filings and statements by the Ecuadorian courts showing at  
 11 each level how this is a diffuse case. But let's look at  
 12 Slide 107 to the words of Plaintiffs' lawyer Julio Prieta,  
 13 where he said, "what we're claiming in this lawsuit has  
 14 never been indemnifications for damages to individuals due  
 15 to health reasons or for the death of a particular  
 16 person." In other words, no individual damages. We're  
 17 not suing for millions as indemnification for sick  
 18 persons. We're demanding a compensation system for  
 19 something that is diffuse, and that's public health.  
 20 Slide 108 is an excerpt from the Lago Agrio  
 21 Plaintiffs' pleadings in a 2014 court filing before the  
 22 Second Circuit in the RICO case describing the Lago Agrio  
 23 Judgment that they had won, and you see at Pages 5 and 6,  
 24 they say, the Provincial Court of Sucumbios, that's the  
 25 First Instance Appellate Court that affirmed the Lago

11:34 1 Agrio Judgment, "declined to hold Chevron liable" for  
 2 what? For "individualized damages to inhabitants for  
 3 injuries." So, look at those words: Chevron is not  
 4 liable for individualized damages. It's not liable for  
 5 actual injuries caused to personal--to particular  
 6 individuals. So, no personal harm in the words of the  
 7 Plaintiffs, and that should be the end of the story.  
 8 And Ecuador itself recognizes as much or at least  
 9 it used to do so because it told you in no uncertain  
 10 terms, before your Track 1 Award forced them to change  
 11 their story, that this is a diffuse or a collective  
 12 Judgment, not an individual one. You see Paragraph 35  
 13 from their preliminary jurisdictional objections back in  
 14 2010. "The environmental Plaintiffs have elected to  
 15 narrow from Aguinda their requested relief in the Lago  
 16 Agrio Litigation and not pursue personal-injury claims.  
 17 So, not pursue personal-injury claims, full stop. In  
 18 other words, again, no personal harm.  
 19 And Ecuador reiterated the point in oral argument  
 20 at the May 2010 interim measures Hearing. I suspect it  
 21 wasn't practical to be bring thousands of personal-injury  
 22 claims." That's why they dropped it. Exactly. The  
 23 reason that it wasn't practical is because as you know,  
 24 Ecuador had and it has no class action mechanism. The  
 25 Plaintiffs couldn't aggregate their individual claims in a

11:36 1 representative way like they could in the United States.  
 2 They had to do it by signing up each and every individual  
 3 as a named Plaintiff.  
 4 In Ecuador, you can't represent the individual  
 5 rights of others who are similarly situated. You can only  
 6 act in a representative capacity with respect to diffuse  
 7 rights.  
 8 And what this means is that, absent a class  
 9 action, this case can only be about one of two things.  
 10 There's just two options: The first, if it's 48  
 11 individual claims, then we should see a judgment that  
 12 assesses personal harm as to these 48, and only these 48,  
 13 named Plaintiffs. But we know that the Judgment doesn't  
 14 do that. And, in fact, Ecuador doesn't even argue before  
 15 you that the Judgment does that. You've seen the  
 16 Plaintiffs' words you've seen Ecuador's words before your  
 17 Track 1 Award say affirmatively that it does not do that.  
 18 So, that's how we get to the inescapable  
 19 conclusion that this Judgment vindicates only diffuse or  
 20 collective rights. Again, personal harm, as you held,  
 21 that's the key, and it's not in the Judgment as to these  
 22 Plaintiffs.  
 23 Now, at every level of this case, the Ecuadorian  
 24 courts have expressly said that the Judgment vindicates no  
 25 individual rights because it finds no personal harm to the

11:37 1 named Plaintiffs. We can start with the Judgment at  
 2 Page 33. The Plaintiffs have not requested personal  
 3 compensation for any harm. They've "demanded the  
 4 protection of a collective right according in accordance  
 5 with the formalities provided by the EMA, the redress of  
 6 environmental harm," that's the link to Article 19.2 of  
 7 the Constitution, which you held the diffuse use of that  
 8 was released, which has been alleged in this lawsuit and  
 9 affects more than 30,000 people, those supposedly being  
 10 undetermined.  
 11 So, a collective right to repair harm to a  
 12 30,000-member community of undetermined people. How can  
 13 Ecuador tell you with a straight face that this refers to  
 14 individual rights?  
 15 And remember, if the named Plaintiffs represent  
 16 those 30,000 others that you just saw them identify in the  
 17 Judgment, they can only do so as representatives of the  
 18 diffuse community interest, and the reason for that is  
 19 because, as Ecuador has said and as you've held in your  
 20 Track 1B Decision, no one can represent another's  
 21 individual rights in Ecuador without that person's express  
 22 consent. It's at Paragraph 165 of your recent decision:  
 23 "The Respondent acknowledges that the named Plaintiffs did  
 24 not, and could not, represent anyone but themselves before  
 25 the Lago Agrio Court."

11:39 1 So, again, those two options I mentioned earlier,  
 2 they could represent just themselves, just the 48, or they  
 3 could represent the community in a diffuse way under the  
 4 EMA, and that's exactly what they ultimately did; that's  
 5 what the Judgment purported to vindicate. So, that's the  
 6 Judgment.  
 7 Move to the Clarification Order, which was even  
 8 more precise because here you have an express disclaimer  
 9 that the Judgment vindicated any individual rights, and  
 10 it's at Page 24. "When mention is made of damage to  
 11 persons, it is explained in the Judgment that what is  
 12 involved is damage to their culture and damage to their  
 13 health. This should not be confused with personal damage  
 14 in the sense of damage to individuals. Rather, it should  
 15 be understood as damage to persons or human beings in  
 16 general." So, this is the Clarification Order instructing  
 17 the Parties that if there is anything in the Judgment that  
 18 even seems to be referring to individualized harm or to a  
 19 vindication of individualized rights, that's not what the  
 20 Judgment was doing. That's not what that language was  
 21 intended to do. It's referring to damage to persons or  
 22 human beings in general. This should not be confused with  
 23 personal damage in the sense of damage to individuals.  
 24 So, again, no personal harm, to use your Track 1  
 25 Award's language. How could this language in the

11:40 1 Clarification Order be any clearer as to the nature of the  
 2 rights being vindicated?  
 3 Same with the Appellate Decision at Page 3, "the  
 4 economic losses suffered by the Plaintiffs" were "not  
 5 alleged in the complaint." There's not any claim  
 6 whatsoever for their compensation; the record contains no  
 7 grounds that would justify ordering the Defendant to  
 8 indemnify them. The complaint asks for the remediation of  
 9 the environmental damage. There is that link to 19.2  
 10 again: Diffuse environmental damage, not personal harm.  
 11 No claim, no grounds in the record whatsoever for  
 12 individual economic losses suffered by the Plaintiffs.  
 13 And then the Cassation Decision comes out and  
 14 says in as few words as possible, and you've seen this  
 15 language before. It's at Page 185 of the National Court's  
 16 Judgment, and it calls these so-called, "popular action  
 17 lawsuits "having to do with diffuse rights under which  
 18 Rule this complaint has been filed;" that is to say, they  
 19 are collective rights.  
 20 So, Ecuador's national Court of Justice is  
 21 telling us two things here: The first is that diffuse and  
 22 collective rights are the same in the context of this  
 23 particular case, Ecuador's attempts to play semantic games  
 24 between these two terms notwithstanding.  
 25 But the second is that this is a diffuse-rights

11:41 1 case. You see it in black and white, "having to do with  
 2 diffuse rights under which rule this complaint has been  
 3 filed." That's it. So, Ecuador is here today telling you  
 4 that this is an individual-rights case, and you see on the  
 5 screen the National Court of Justice telling you that it's  
 6 a diffuse-rights case. How can they do this with a  
 7 straight face?

8 Now, speaking of the National Court of Justice,  
 9 recall that Ecuador has a pending request before you to  
 10 reconsider your final and binding Track 1 Award, based on  
 11 the Cassation Decision that contradicted you, that  
 12 disagreed with you, as you see in the language on the  
 13 screen--and I'm not going to read it, but it's the  
 14 operative language, by saying that the 1995 Settlement  
 15 does not bar diffuse claims, by saying that Claimants were  
 16 not released from diffuse liability under Article 19.2 of  
 17 the Constitution.

18 You see, there has never really been a debate  
 19 about the substantive rights that the Judgment purports to  
 20 vindicate in Lago Agrio. You've seen the Plaintiffs,  
 21 you've seen Ecuador, you've seen the courts say exactly  
 22 what we are here saying here today, that this is a  
 23 diffuse-rights case, not an individual-rights case. What  
 24 Ecuador did was it fought Claimants' Track 1 claim  
 25 originally, you will recall, on the ground that the

11:43 1 settlements didn't bar diffuse claims. That's what the  
 2 Cassation Decision said. You see it on the screen. But  
 3 Ecuador lost that argument with your binding Track 1  
 4 Award, and so the remaining piece of the puzzle, the last  
 5 step which is that the Judgment is wholly diffuse and  
 6 therefore barred by settlement, it just isn't seriously in  
 7 dispute.

8 Now, aside from the words of the Plaintiffs, the  
 9 words of Ecuador, what the courts have said at every  
 10 level, the easiest way to see that is to look at the  
 11 actual substance of the Judgment itself at each of the  
 12 seven categories of harm that it found. And I've listed  
 13 those on Slide 117, and the reason is because under each  
 14 one of these, we see the same thing, which is a total lack  
 15 of individualized findings and a confirmation of what the  
 16 courts said, that this is a purely diffuse-rights  
 17 judgment. I told you that it's a diffuse-rights judgment,  
 18 if you look at the substance, which you pointed out was  
 19 the primary thing to look at in your Track 1B Decision, it  
 20 shows you that it is a diffuse-rights Judgment.

21 And we can take as the best example of this from  
 22 these Categories, the most personal type of harm  
 23 imaginable, which is the harm to health, but in this  
 24 Judgment it's only talking about the harm to public  
 25 health, a diffuse not an individual harm. And you can

11:44 1 look at the language that I've excerpted on the screen  
 2 from Pages 138 and 139 of the Judgment and consider how  
 3 impossible it is to square with the notion that this is a  
 4 judgment based on individual claims. The Court says,  
 5 "with regard to the harm to people's health," "proof has  
 6 not been presented of the existence of harm to the health  
 7 of specific persons." There exists harm to public  
 8 health--that's diffuse--but "no medical certificates have  
 9 been submitted to show the existence of harm or injuries  
 10 to or a specific health problem of a given individual."  
 11 "The reparation of particular harm has not been  
 12 requested." "The submitted evidence does not necessarily  
 13 refer to the particular harm, but to the harm to public  
 14 health." The fact that no particular injuries or harm  
 15 have been proved--this is the Court's conclusion--the fact  
 16 that no particular injuries or harms have been proved is  
 17 irrelevant, and it goes on to say, the reason is because  
 18 they're only analyzing the existence of harm to public  
 19 health. So public health, not individual, not personal  
 20 harm.

21 More specifically as to the health findings,  
 22 potential cancer discussed in the Judgment, diffuse, not  
 23 individual. Page 184, "there exists sufficient  
 24 indications to demonstrate the existence of an excessive  
 25 number of cancer deaths. However, "we must note that the

11:46 1 reparation of particular cases of cancer has not been  
 2 demanded nor are such cases identified; thus, they're not  
 3 remediable."

4 So, \$800 million in this Judgment to address  
 5 cancer where not a single particular case of cancer has  
 6 been alleged or identified.

7 Now, that's an absurd result for a lot of  
 8 different reasons, but it's certainly dispositive that  
 9 this is not a judgment based on individual claims. And I  
 10 hope that Ecuador would at least agree that if you're  
 11 going to vindicate an individual cancer claim, you'd have  
 12 to at a minimum identify an individual's instance of  
 13 cancer.

14 The Clarification Order goes on in the same  
 15 subject, Page 23. We're not going to have a list of  
 16 affected persons because "it was clearly established" that  
 17 we are facing "a situation of damage to public health and  
 18 not to individualized claims for injuries or diseases."  
 19 We're not even listing affected persons. Again, how can  
 20 anyone say with a straight face that this means personal  
 21 harm?

22 Now, what I've taken you through so far Ecuador  
 23 doesn't like to spend time talking about. It doesn't like  
 24 to talk about how the Plaintiffs have characterized the  
 25 Judgment, how it used characterize it, what the courts in

11:47 1 Ecuador themselves have said characterizing the Judgment,  
 2 and that's because they really don't have an answer to the  
 3 overwhelming weight of the evidence that you've just seen.  
 4 What they do is they point as their single defense to the  
 5 2002 Delfina Torres case, and they say Delfina Torres is  
 6 an individual case. It's similar to Lago Agrio;  
 7 therefore, Lago Agrio must be an individual case.  
 8       There's two points with respect to Delfina  
 9 Torres. The first is the obvious one at the level of  
 10 form, and that's that the Delfina Court, as you know, it's  
 11 not in dispute, refers to the itself as a case vindicating  
 12 individual rights under Article 2214 of the Civil Code.  
 13 The Lago Agrio Case, at every level, as you've just seen,  
 14 refers to itself as vindicating diffuse or collective  
 15 rights. So, that's the distinction between the two.  
 16       But the second point is that if you dig into the  
 17 substance of the two cases, you see that that confirms the  
 18 distinction that the courts have made. One truly is  
 19 individual, one truly is diffuse.  
 20       Now, you talked about the substance, as, of  
 21 course you recall, of the Delfina Torres case in your  
 22 Track 1B Decision, and I've put up your operative summary  
 23 from Paragraph 174 of the Decision. In doing so, you  
 24 recognized the key feature that distinguishes Delfina from  
 25 Lago Agrio, which is the individualized harm findings.

11:49 1 So, you talk about how the Court did three things in  
 2 Delfina. Number one, it acknowledged that "the normal  
 3 relief for injury suffered by the Plaintiffs is pecuniary  
 4 compensation." Number two, it held that "pecuniary  
 5 compensation, due to those Plaintiffs" in Delfina as  
 6 individuals and, in your words, "but no other person"  
 7 amounted to \$11 million; in other words, individualized  
 8 findings of \$11 million worth of harm to the Plaintiffs in  
 9 the case.  
 10       And then, and only then, third, "in view of the  
 11 desire expressed by the Plaintiffs, such amount was to be  
 12 applied to remedial works to satisfy the needs of the  
 13 community," but the cost of those works was "not to exceed  
 14 the amount of \$11 million." In other words, it could be  
 15 used for the community, but the cost was not to exceed the  
 16 amount determined of personal harm.  
 17       In other words, Delfina found specific harm  
 18 suffered by the Plaintiffs "but no other person", in your  
 19 words. It calculated that harm, and it awarded damages  
 20 for that harm, but not a penny more.  
 21       Then, and only then, the Plaintiffs chose to use  
 22 the money for the benefit of their communities, but they  
 23 didn't have to do that. The Court commended them for it  
 24 in its Judgment, but it said they didn't have to do it  
 25 because it was their money for their harm, again your

11:50 1 language, "but no other person." And that's the  
 2 distinction between Delfina and Lago Agrio: Individual  
 3 harm findings and a damages amount linked only to that  
 4 individual harm. If Lago Agrio were an individual case,  
 5 then the \$9.5 billion in damages, just like the 11 million  
 6 in Delfina, would be linked to harm to the 48 named  
 7 Plaintiffs and no other person. But as we've seen, it's  
 8 not so linked.  
 9       And we can look a little deeper into how the  
 10 Delfina Plaintiffs has acted on their own behalves in that  
 11 case, while the Lago Agrio Plaintiffs acted on behalf of  
 12 the diffuse community interests, another distinguishing  
 13 factor. You see the citation from Page 5 of Delfina.  
 14 "Nowhere in the complaint is it stated that the Party  
 15 bringing the complaint does so as the representative of,  
 16 nor on behalf of, the public interest." They're doing it  
 17 for themselves. Contrast that with Section 6 of the Lago  
 18 Agrio Complaint, filed in the Plaintiffs "capacity as  
 19 members of the affected communities and in safeguard of  
 20 their recognized collective rights." So, representative  
 21 capacity, collective rights, no assignment of their  
 22 individual interests to any other person or entity, the  
 23 essence of a diffuse-rights case.  
 24       And, finally, we can look at the type of evidence  
 25 that supported the respective harm findings in Delfina as

11:52 1 opposed to Lago Agrio. On the left, from Page 28 of  
 2 Delfina, you see that personal individualized evidence, a  
 3 detailed examination of each resident, mainly their  
 4 "psychological health." A report from a doctor that  
 5 "contains a detailed diagnosis and prognosis of the  
 6 illnesses suffered" by all of those residents for whom she  
 7 is, in fact, their "treating physician". So,  
 8 individualized findings. That's what makes an  
 9 individual-rights case.  
 10       Look at Page 138 of Lago Agrio, we have seen this  
 11 earlier: "Proof has not been presented of the existence  
 12 of harm to the health of specific persons. "No medical  
 13 certificates have been submitted. No evidence in the  
 14 entire Judgment showing that individualized harm,  
 15 generalized findings, and that's what makes a  
 16 diffuse-rights case.  
 17       So, that's the distinction between Delfina and  
 18 Lago Agrio. Just like with Delfina, you recognize the  
 19 importance of individualized findings in your comparison  
 20 in your Track 1B Decision to the common law public  
 21 nuisance case, and I'm pulling an excerpt from  
 22 Paragraph 178, and here you're quoting in the italicized  
 23 language the Leo case from New York, which says that, "in  
 24 the absence of special damage," it's usually a "public  
 25 authority" that corrects a public nuisance. But "one who

11:53 1 suffers damage or injury beyond the general inconvenience  
 2 to the public at large may recover for nuisance damages"  
 3 or get an injunction.  
 4       And then here is the standard for whether you get  
 5 to do that or not: If there is some injury "peculiar" to  
 6 a Plaintiff, a private action premised on a public  
 7 nuisance may be maintained, and the Leo Court goes on to  
 8 explain that in that case it was proved because the  
 9 peculiar injury was to the commercial interests of  
 10 commercial fishermen. So, there has to be injury peculiar  
 11 to a Plaintiff beyond the harm done to them as members of  
 12 the communities at large. An individual injury, for  
 13 example, beyond harm to public health, so there has to be,  
 14 to go back to the standard that you set up in your Track 1  
 15 Award, there has to be personal harm.  
 16       So, what this all adds up to is that the Judgment  
 17 ignored the Releases by purporting to vindicate only  
 18 diffuse rights. And we actually know why it did that, and  
 19 the reason is because once the Aguinda Case was dismissed  
 20 in New York, with no class action available in Ecuador,  
 21 this was the only way for Donziger and his fellow RICO  
 22 conspirators to get big money. They had to file a diffuse  
 23 case because it was the only way that they could represent  
 24 more than just the named Plaintiffs. And we see this from  
 25 Plaintiffs' lawyer Cristobal Bonifaz's argument to the New

11:55 1 York Court in 1999 opposing the Aguinda dismissal: "What  
 2 purpose will it serve for us to take 73 Plaintiffs, go to  
 3 Ecuador, file suits, even if we were able to succeed  
 4 because what are we going to get fixed? Plots of land,  
 5 which are 8 acres apiece." In other words, the  
 6 individuals' plots of land. "That is all we can seek in  
 7 Ecuador." That's all they can seek. That's all they  
 8 could have sought, and that's all that they could seek in  
 9 Ecuador. No class action. Just individual damages for  
 10 any named Plaintiffs.  
 11       Or what they did, in fact, seek and what they  
 12 did, in fact, get in the Lago Agrio Judgment, which was a  
 13 diffuse-rights judgment for the community, ignoring the  
 14 Releases.  
 15       Now, I'd like to close on the Releases by  
 16 pointing you to an Ecuador Court decision that perhaps  
 17 best reveals the absurdity in Ecuador's attempt to  
 18 convince you that the Lago Agrio Judgment vindicates  
 19 individual rights. You recall from their briefing they  
 20 say it does so because it does it through Civil Code  
 21 claims, Articles 2214 and Article 5236.  
 22       What you see on the screen is an excerpt from an  
 23 appellate opinion signed by Judge Zambrano in the Red  
 24 Amazónica case. Now, as you know, the Lago Agrio case was  
 25 heard under what's called the summary verbal procedure.

11:56 1 In this case, the Red Amazónica case tells us that only  
 2 environmental harm cases under the EMA--in other words,  
 3 only diffuse cases and only diffuse claims--may be heard  
 4 under that summary verbal procedure.  
 5       Look at the quotes from Red Amazónica. "There  
 6 has been an improper joinder of environmental and civil  
 7 actions." "Only environmental claims may be considered  
 8 because only environmental claims may be heard in summary  
 9 verbal proceedings." "Environmental action protects a  
 10 common good;" in other words, it's diffuse. "An action to  
 11 recover damages seeks to protect an individual's property  
 12 which, though important, cannot be compared to a good that  
 13 belongs to everyone." In other words, it is individual.  
 14 It cannot be compared to a diffuse good. "No claim  
 15 connected to the compensation of purely civil damages can  
 16 be considered in the resolution of this case." It's  
 17 contrary to law, it's a violation of law to allow an  
 18 environmental action for the purpose of claiming ordinary  
 19 civil compensation.  
 20       So, Mr. President and Members of the Tribunal,  
 21 this is Judge Zambrano clearly saying that individual  
 22 actions under the Civil Code, actions for personal harm  
 23 can't be heard the way that the Lago Agrio Case  
 24 indisputably was heard. This is all the proof that you  
 25 need, and you've seen an overwhelming amount of it

11:58 1 already, but this is all the proof that you need that Lago  
 2 Agrio is in no way an individual-rights Judgment.  
 3 Legally, it couldn't be because of the way that it was  
 4 handled.  
 5       And if Ecuador wants to convince you otherwise,  
 6 they have a simple way to do so. They can show us. They  
 7 can show us the individual harm findings, they can show us  
 8 the individualized damages findings, but they can't do  
 9 that because they're just not there, and that's why you've  
 10 seen the courts disclaim their being there.  
 11       The second legal absurdity is that the Judgment  
 12 ignores the basic tort element of causation. And this one  
 13 is simple and it's pretty obvious because the Ecuadorian  
 14 courts actually couldn't keep their own story straight on  
 15 this issue.  
 16       First, the Judgment pretended to consider  
 17 Petroecuador's responsibility. We see that the  
 18 Clarification Order Page 8, "no pit constructed by  
 19 Petroecuador or spill caused by that company is covered by  
 20 the Judgment." That sounds good. "The damage caused by  
 21 Petroecuador has not been considered, using a time-based  
 22 approach that divides liability", and then attributes it  
 23 to the Operator at the time.  
 24       But if you look at the Judgment, you quickly  
 25 realize that this simply isn't true. There are no

11:59 1 causation findings as to Petroecuador versus TexPet's  
 2 liability. There is no time-based approach, and Ecuador  
 3 can't point to you where the Judgment employs that  
 4 time-based approach.  
 5 But you don't have to take my word for it because  
 6 the Cassation Decision actually admits and celebrates the  
 7 Judgment's refusal to perform a causation analysis with  
 8 respect to this issue. Page 117 of the Cassation  
 9 Decision, "the Court of Appeals was not responsible" "for  
 10 analyzing Petroecuador's liability", much less to  
 11 attribute some damage to Chevron and other to  
 12 Petroecuador," violate due process and even worse.  
 13 So, that time-based approach that we were assured  
 14 was done, it wasn't. To do it apparently would have  
 15 violated due process or perhaps worse. You don't get more  
 16 absurd than this type of so-called "judicial reasoning."  
 17 To attribute harm to a particular tortfeasor somehow  
 18 violates due process. Amazing. And then the National  
 19 Court of Justice ignores the Clarification Order that we  
 20 just saw pretending to do just that.  
 21 So, why does the Judgment ignore causation in  
 22 this respect? The same reason as with the Releases:  
 23 Money. Look at the yellow shaded area in the midst of  
 24 Petroecuador's solo operations on the timeline of  
 25 operations in the Concession Area. That's where the

12:00 1 judicial inspections took place. That's where all the  
 2 alleged evidence of environmental contamination in this  
 3 place came from. That's when it was collected. During a  
 4 period of time well over a decade after TexPet had ceased  
 5 operating.  
 6 So, the Plaintiffs' lawyers are getting money for  
 7 what Petroecuador presumptively caused, and then, of  
 8 course, Petroecuador and the State on the flip side get to  
 9 push their liability for what they presumptively caused to  
 10 Chevron. And again, you don't have to take my word for it  
 11 because that was the deal that they made. Mr. Bishop  
 12 referenced this earlier this morning: The beginning of  
 13 their conspiracy. Look at what the Attorney General of  
 14 Ecuador requested in this waiver of rights document, that  
 15 "the compensation sought" in the Aguinda Case "be paid  
 16 exclusively by Texaco." And then the Plaintiffs accepted  
 17 that. They said, "we hereby expressly waive the right to  
 18 file any claim against [the State], Petroecuador, its  
 19 affiliates" or any public sector institution. In other  
 20 words, I scratch your back, and you scratch mine.  
 21 And the Plaintiffs' lawyers knew what they were  
 22 doing. They knew that Petroecuador was responsible for  
 23 harm in this Concession Area. You see on the screen an  
 24 excerpt from an e-mail from former Plaintiffs'  
 25 environmental expert David Russell, and he's reporting on

12:02 1 a conversation that he had with Steve Donziger, and  
 2 Mr. Donziger apparently told him "the analysis and  
 3 reporting of GRO and BTEX data is self-defeating except to  
 4 show that the contamination is much more recent than we  
 5 would desire"--that's interesting phraseology--"and that  
 6 would lead to an argument that the contamination is by  
 7 Petroecuador rather than Texaco."  
 8 So, two things here: This is exactly the point  
 9 that I was making with the timeline of operations on the  
 10 previous slide. If you test in 2004, when Petroecuador  
 11 has been operating alone for over a decade, then any harm  
 12 that you'll find is presumptively Petroecuador harm.  
 13 And if you want to legitimately attribute it to  
 14 TexPet, you have to show causation, but as you saw, the  
 15 Judgment absurdly doesn't even purport to do that.  
 16 Third legal absurdity. It also ignores  
 17 principles of corporate separateness. Now, both Parties  
 18 agree that the legal standard for veil-piercing under  
 19 Ecuadorian law is abuse of the corporate form. In the  
 20 Lago Agrio Case, the courts pierced three different levels  
 21 of corporate separateness, from TexPet up to Texaco, over  
 22 to Chevron, and from the Judgment debtor Chevron down to  
 23 its worldwide subsidiaries in the execution orders issued  
 24 by the Ecuadorian enforcement courts purporting to enforce  
 25 the Judgment. So, we should expect to see three recent

12:03 1 sets of reasoned findings of abuse of the corporate  
 2 form--that's a particular standard--one for each of these  
 3 veils that the courts pierce.  
 4 But again, we see none of that in the Judgment.  
 5 And I encourage you to read it. You won't find any of  
 6 this. No evidence of reasoning or findings of that  
 7 particular agreed standard, abuse of the corporate form.  
 8 There is no debate that that's what you have to find, but  
 9 the evidence just isn't there, so the findings aren't  
 10 there.  
 11 And I want to emphasize that this isn't an  
 12 instance where we simply disagree with the Court having  
 13 done this reasoning the way it did it. We're saying it's  
 14 not there. They didn't make the findings to apply this  
 15 standard that they agree is the standard, and so it's a  
 16 juridical impossibility. It's not legal reasoning.  
 17 And the reason for this is actually twofold: For  
 18 the first two veils to get to Texaco and to get to  
 19 Chevron, the Plaintiffs just messed up. They sued the  
 20 wrong party, and they had to try to fix it in the Judgment  
 21 that they wrote, and so you see Donziger's diary saying  
 22 this goes back to Alberto Wray's errors, suing the wrong  
 23 party in the complaint.  
 24 And for the last veil, to get to the worldwide  
 25 subsidiaries, well, the money against the Judgment debtor

12:05 1 Chevron Corporation is located where Chevron Corporation  
 2 is located, which is the United States. But as you know  
 3 from the RICO case, there is an injunction from preventing  
 4 the enforcement of that Judgment. And so, where are the  
 5 Lago Agrio Plaintiffs' lawyers going outside the United  
 6 States to try to get money? Argentina, Brazil, Canada.  
 7 But neither the Operator TexPet nor its parent Texaco, nor  
 8 the actual Judgment debtor Chevron is present in any of  
 9 these three jurisdictions, and so that's why the courts  
 10 had to pierce that third veil to the worldwide subs. They  
 11 had to write a judgment without being able to point to any  
 12 evidence of abuse piercing these three different levels of  
 13 corporate separateness.  
 14 So, you have seen that the Plaintiffs bought and  
 15 paid for a judgment that ignores the Releases, ignores a  
 16 key element of causation and ignores corporate  
 17 separateness. Professor Paulsson will explain a bit later  
 18 how doing that constitutes a denial of justice, just like  
 19 the fraud that Mr. Bishop discussed with you constitutes a  
 20 denial of justice, but first let me turn the floor over to  
 21 Ms. Renfroe to discuss the environmental issues.  
 22 Thank you, Mr. President.  
 23 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Just one moment, maybe one  
 24 question from the Tribunal.  
 25 ARBITRATOR LOWE: Just a question of

12:06 1 clarification. You said that the Judgment was not based on  
 2 individual claims. Is it your position that the  
 3 7th May 2003 Complaint did not include individual  
 4 complaints, or do you regard that as a separate matter?  
 5 MR. CORIELL: It is our position, and it continues  
 6 to be our position that the Complaint did not include  
 7 individual claims. A lot of the same evidence that you  
 8 have seen from the statements of the Plaintiffs indicates  
 9 that. It is, however, a separate matter because regardless  
 10 of whether the Claim is articulated in individual  
 11 complaints in the Complaint, the Judgment does not  
 12 vindicate any, and that can be easily seen by what the  
 13 courts say about it, and by looking at the substance of the  
 14 harm findings in the Judgment.  
 15 ARBITRATOR LOWE: And that is something to which  
 16 you might come back in the closing, I imagine, the  
 17 relationship between the Complaint and the decision in the  
 18 light of our decision on Track 1B?  
 19 MR. CORIELL: We will do so, thank you.  
 20 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you.  
 21 Ms. Renfroe.  
 22 MS. RENFROE: Thank you, Members of the Tribunal.  
 23 Now that Mr. Coriell has addressed the legal  
 24 absurdities in the Judgment, I am going to address the  
 25 factual absurdities in three parts: First, the Settlement

12:07 1 Agreement itself, because it indeed resolves all  
 2 environmental issues, any Judgment is an absurdity.  
 3 The second part I will address is the fact that  
 4 the damage awards in the Judgment are grounded in fraud,  
 5 not science and, therefore, in and of themselves represent  
 6 a denial of justice.  
 7 And then my third point will address why  
 8 Ecuador's new environmental experts in this arbitration  
 9 case, why their ex post work does nothing to resuscitate  
 10 this fraudulent judgment.  
 11 So, let me begin with the Settlement Agreement,  
 12 which, as I say, and as we have demonstrated, resolves all  
 13 environmental issues concerning diffuse rights.  
 14 I take you back first to the Settlement Agreement  
 15 itself agreed by the Parties in 1995; and, in that  
 16 critical instrument, the Parties agreed on a process to  
 17 evaluate the environmental extent of the Consortium's  
 18 operations, they agreed on the critical remediation  
 19 techniques that would be used; and, perhaps most important  
 20 for this controversy, they agreed on the precise areas  
 21 within the former Concession Area that TexPet was to  
 22 address, and you can find those areas listed in the  
 23 annexes at the back of the Settlement Agreement.  
 24 Then in the more detailed Remedial Action Plan,  
 25 or RAP as we sometimes call it, the Parties provided the

12:09 1 specific items for remedial work that TexPet was to  
 2 accomplish; and, so between these two instruments, they  
 3 provide the Tribunal the critical framework you need to  
 4 evaluate any environmental claim and any environmental  
 5 evidence.  
 6 Looking at these two instruments more carefully  
 7 and in more detail, what we see from them is that  
 8 everything not expressly allocated to TexPet for  
 9 remediation in the tables at the back of the Remedial  
 10 Action Plan remained the responsibility of Petroecuador  
 11 and Ecuador to address. This is a very, very, critical  
 12 point to realize about the core part of the Parties'  
 13 agreement, and that is: Number one, the Parties did not  
 14 agree to require TexPet to remediate the entire Concession  
 15 Area. To the contrary, they agreed only that TexPet was  
 16 required to remediate certain features at certain sites.  
 17 And so, when we look at the Remedial Action Plan, we see  
 18 that only certain features were assigned to TexPet at 157  
 19 sites. The balance of those sites remained the  
 20 responsibility of Petroecuador.  
 21 Likewise, we see from these two critical  
 22 instruments that 187 sites were not assigned for any  
 23 responsibility to TexPet whatsoever, again remaining the  
 24 responsibility of Petroecuador.  
 25 Now, this division or allocation of

12:11 1 responsibilities for remedial work made perfect sense when  
 2 you think about the fact that Petroecuador was, indeed,  
 3 the majority partner of the Consortium, and between it and  
 4 Ecuador having collected over \$22 billion over the life of  
 5 the Consortium, while TexPet earned approximately  
 6 \$500 million.

7 And then a very second important practical reason  
 8 also explains this division of remediation  
 9 responsibilities, and that is that Petroecuador was  
 10 continuing to operate this Concession Area throughout the  
 11 time that TexPet was doing its remediation.

12 So, the key takeaway, the key framework for the  
 13 Tribunal is that there was no one site that was allocated  
 14 to TexPet in its entirety, and certainly not the entire  
 15 Concession Area. And so, what we get with this framework  
 16 is the distinction between the RAP areas specifically  
 17 listed in the back of the Remedial Action Plan--and when I  
 18 say RAP areas, I mean those RAP items that TexPet was  
 19 supposed to take care of--and everything else is a non-RAP  
 20 area or non-RAP feature.

21 Let me illustrate this distinction with a little  
 22 more detail.

23 On this slide, on the left, I'm so showing you a  
 24 drawing of the Lago Six well platform. The wellhead  
 25 itself is in the middle of this yellow platform. And then

12:12 1 when you look at Table 3.1 from the Remedial Action Plan,  
 2 you will find that only one out of the two pits at this  
 3 site, Pit 1, was assigned to TexPet for remediation. The  
 4 other pit, Pit Number 2 was not assigned to TexPet for  
 5 remediation, nor was anything else surrounding the  
 6 platform.

7 So, what we take away from looking at this  
 8 Remedial Action Plan table, is that there was a single pit  
 9 allocated to TexPet with a balance remaining  
 10 Petroecuador's responsibility.

11 And so, this illustrates my point and the  
 12 framework for the Tribunal to use of this RAP versus  
 13 non-RAP distinction.

14 Now, further proof that it was never the  
 15 Agreement of the Parties that TexPet was supposed to  
 16 remediate either the entire Concession or even an entire  
 17 site, further proof of that can be found in the language  
 18 of the Settlement Agreement itself. When you look at  
 19 Section 5.1 of the Settlement Agreement, you will see that  
 20 in 1995, when that Agreement was signed, the Government of  
 21 Ecuador and Petroecuador released TexPet at that time for  
 22 all non-RAP liabilities. And then upon completion of  
 23 TexPet's remediation work, which has been documented in  
 24 great detail in the Woodward Clyde 2000 Report, upon  
 25 completion of that work, then the Government of Ecuador

12:14 1 and Petroecuador released TexPet for the so-called "RAP  
 2 liabilities."

3 So, these two documents again confirm that the  
 4 Parties' agreement was only that TexPet was to remediate  
 5 certain discrete portions of the Concession Area.

6 Further evidence confirming this as the agreement  
 7 of the Parties can be found in the testimony of two senior  
 8 ranking Ecuadorian environmental officials. On the top, I  
 9 have summarized the testimony of Manuel Muñoz, who was  
 10 then the Director of DINAPA, the environmental arm of  
 11 Ecuador's Ministry of Energy and Mines.

12 In 2006, he told Ecuador's Congress: "Texaco has  
 13 completed the remediation of the pits that were their  
 14 responsibility; this was 33 percent of the total." But in  
 15 the intervening decades, Petroecuador had done little.  
 16 And then again, before this Tribunal in 2012, Giovanni  
 17 Rosania Schiavone, who at that time was the Undersecretary  
 18 of Environmental Protection for the Ministry of Energy and  
 19 Mines, he told this Tribunal, as Mr. Bishop mentioned  
 20 earlier, he insisted that the "technical work and the  
 21 environmental work was done well," and they accepted,  
 22 meaning the Government of Ecuador accepted, that "the  
 23 environmental problem" in the areas assigned to TexPet had  
 24 been corrected.

25 There is no question that at the time that

12:15 1 Ecuador and Petroecuador executed the Final Release that I  
 2 showed you a moment ago, they were fully aware that TexPet  
 3 had not remediated the entire Concession Area nor had  
 4 remediated even an entire site. They knew that and that's  
 5 because that was the agreement of the Parties. That is  
 6 specific items as identified in the Remedial Action Plan  
 7 schedules, those are the only items assigned to TexPet.

8 Now, notwithstanding this irrefutable evidence of  
 9 what the Parties agreement was, now in this arbitration  
 10 case, for purposes of justifying this fraudulent Judgment,  
 11 we find that the Government of Ecuador has taken a  
 12 completely opposite position in asserting and complaining  
 13 that TexPet did not remediate the entire Concession Area  
 14 or even remediate an entire site. But, Members of the  
 15 Tribunal, as I have just shown you, that was never the  
 16 agreement of the Parties, and the evidence is irrefutable  
 17 on that point.

18 Now, in this arbitration case, instead what we  
 19 see from the Government of Ecuador and its experts is a  
 20 litany of complaints about TexPet's work, not  
 21 coincidentally the very same complaints that were urged  
 22 against Chevron in the Lago Case, and I have summarized  
 23 those complaints on the left-hand side of the slide.  
 24 Again, the Settlement Agreement and Remedial Action Plan  
 25 give you the framework you need to consider these.



12:17 1 Let me give you an example, you perhaps have read  
 2 about the complaint we now hear from Ecuador and its  
 3 Experts that TexPet closed pits before June of 1990 when  
 4 it handed over operations to Petroecuador, and that those  
 5 are somehow now hidden pits, and they complain that TexPet  
 6 did not remediate those pits.  
 7 Members of the Tribunal, you have only to look at  
 8 Section 3.1.2 of the Remedial Action Plan and you will see  
 9 that the Parties recognized that category of pits and made  
 10 specific provision for what was to be done with those.  
 11 And I quote here. The Remedial Action Plan says: "Sites  
 12 with pits closed prior to 1990 were investigated for any  
 13 visible soil contamination." Two such pits were found.  
 14 And they were added to the TexPet remediation program.  
 15 So, it cannot be said that those pits closed by TexPet  
 16 before June of 1990 were hidden. The Parties were fully  
 17 aware of them and reached agreement on how to deal with  
 18 them.  
 19 A second example illustrates my point, that the  
 20 Settlement Agreement and RAP are your framework. That is  
 21 now the complaint we hear that TexPet's work was  
 22 inadequate because it used composite sampling to evaluate  
 23 soils and sludges. Once again, the Remedial Action Plan,  
 24 Section 2.4.3, you will find that the Parties expressly  
 25 agreed on the use of composite sampling.

12:18 1 And a third example makes my point. The  
 2 complaint now that TexPet's remediation of pits was  
 3 inadequate and that the TCLP procedure and the criteria of  
 4 a thousand parts per million was an ineffective measure of  
 5 the efficacy of TexPet's remediation of the pits. But if  
 6 you look at the Remedial Action Plan, Section 2.4.4, once  
 7 again, Members of the Tribunal, you will see this is what  
 8 the Parties agreed to.  
 9 And so too as you go down the rest of the list of  
 10 complaints, every one of those complaints is answered in  
 11 full by the Settlement Agreement and the Remedial Action  
 12 Plan that was the agreement of the Parties. And so that  
 13 is why I say the Judgment in any amount whatsoever is a  
 14 complete absurdity.  
 15 But now, this brings me to my second point, which  
 16 is the fact that the damages awards in the Judgment are  
 17 grounded in fraud and not any valid scientific data. The  
 18 evidence shows us that to be the case, and let me  
 19 illustrate that.  
 20 But let me first make this point: Claimants are  
 21 not here quibbling over an erroneous environmental finding  
 22 or two in the Judgment. Instead, our position is that the  
 23 evidence of the damages awarded in the Judgment and the  
 24 lack of evidence to support those damage awards, is so  
 25 overwhelming and those damage awards, on their face, are

12:20 1 so unreasonable that they amount to a denial of justice.  
 2 Now, Mr. Bishop showed you a little while ago in  
 3 very, very graphic detail how the Plaintiffs accomplished  
 4 their fraudulent Judgment, and I'm now going to show you  
 5 why they resorted to fraud over science.  
 6 We have only to look at the private confidential  
 7 communications of the Plaintiffs' lead environmental  
 8 Expert, David Russell, which I have summarized on this  
 9 slide. In his e-mail communications to Steven Donziger  
 10 spanning the Years 2004 to 2006, he's telling Donziger,  
 11 "Texaco may be right when they say the remediation is  
 12 performing as designed. From the data I have seen so far,  
 13 we are not finding any of the highly carcinogenic  
 14 compounds one would hope to see when investigating the oil  
 15 pits." And, third, "I have seen no data which would  
 16 indicate there is any significant surface or groundwater  
 17 contamination caused by petroleum sources."  
 18 Now, this is Mr. Russell's candid assessment of  
 19 the lack of data, notwithstanding the fact that the  
 20 judicial inspection process has been under way for some  
 21 two or three years.  
 22 Now, when he could not provide Mr. Donziger the  
 23 evidence that Mr. Donziger wanted to support a substantial  
 24 Judgment, Donziger replaced them with the Stratus Group.  
 25 And on this snapshot from the crude outtake that

12:22 1 Mr. Bishop played for you early, I have captured some of  
 2 the key findings in a confidential conversation that Ann  
 3 Maest of Stratus had with Steven Donziger, and you can  
 4 listen to this discussion yourself when you listen to this  
 5 Crude outtake, but for now, the key point to take from  
 6 this is Ann Maest tells Steven Donziger: "We have no  
 7 evidence of groundwater contamination, and right now all  
 8 of the reports are saying it's just at the pits and the  
 9 stations," referring to the production stations, "and  
 10 nothing has spread anywhere at all."  
 11 That is the testimony--pardon me--that is the  
 12 confidential assessment conveyed by Ann Maest of Stratus  
 13 to Steven Donziger in a private lunch before the Judgment  
 14 was issued.  
 15 Now, in response to this candid assessment by a  
 16 second team of environmental experts that the data doesn't  
 17 exist to support a substantial Judgment, Steven Donziger  
 18 told his expert team the following which, and again you  
 19 can listen to and you did hear earlier from the Crude  
 20 outtake that Mr. Bishop played you, he told them: "Hold  
 21 on a second, this is Ecuador. You can say what you want,  
 22 and we can get money for it because at the end of the day,  
 23 this is all for the Court, just a bunch of smoke and  
 24 mirrors and bullshit. It really is."  
 25 Well, Members of the Tribunal, eventually when

12:24 1 the technical basis for the Lago Plaintiffs' case was  
 2 indeed revealed to be just a bunch of smoke and mirrors,  
 3 those environmental experts who had told Steven Donziger  
 4 privately, confidentially before the Judgment was issued,  
 5 there was no data to support a significant Judgment, they  
 6 reaffirmed under oath and told and stated under oath  
 7 exactly what they had told him before the Judgment was  
 8 issued.

9 As to the \$5.4 billion soil remediation Award in  
 10 the Judgment, David Russell declared under oath: "I had  
 11 seen no evidence of any widespread contamination, and the  
 12 idea that the cleanup of the oil pits would require  
 13 billions of dollars is nonsense. I am confident that the  
 14 damages number in the Judgment has no basis in fact." The  
 15 sworn testimony of David Russell, which is in this record.

16 The damage awards for groundwater remediation and  
 17 potable water remediation in the hundreds of millions of  
 18 dollars are equally lacking in any scientific basis.  
 19 According to the sworn testimony of Stratus Expert  
 20 Doug Beltman and again, the testimony of David Russell.

21 Turning now to whether there is any basis for the  
 22 health-related awards in the Judgment. Again, in the  
 23 billions of dollars, a \$1.4 billion healthcare Award as to  
 24 that and the Awards for excess cancer claims of  
 25 \$800 million, you again have the sworn testimony of Lago

12:27 1 Concession Area that are impacted around the oilfield  
 2 facilities, the well platforms because Petroecuador, while  
 3 it has done some remedial work, it has not completed all  
 4 of it.

5 But even as to those limited impacts, we still  
 6 find that there is no drinking water contamination based  
 7 on legitimate data as concluded by these experts. There  
 8 is no human health risk.

9 But what has happened in the last 25 years and  
 10 has been documented in the record that Claimants have  
 11 provided is that Petroecuador has operated these oilfields  
 12 for the last 25 years and has expanded them dramatically  
 13 with the effect that the conditions in the Concession Area  
 14 have irrevocably changed from the time when TexPet handed  
 15 over operations in 1990.

16 Now, this brings me to my third point, which is  
 17 the fact that Ecuador's new environmental Experts in this  
 18 arbitration case cannot justify in a post hoc fashion the  
 19 Judgment. I say that because their work is flawed at many  
 20 levels and for many reasons, the key important ones of  
 21 which I have summarized on this slide, and I will go  
 22 through these points now briefly.

23 First, there is the fiction that the Ecuador  
 24 Experts support the Lago Judgment, according to the  
 25 Memorials from the Republic of Ecuador. Members of the

12:25 1 Plaintiff environmental experts who have said, in the case  
 2 of Dr. Charles Calmbacher, he never found that any of the  
 3 sites that he inspected had contamination to such an  
 4 extent that it would endanger human health. And Doug  
 5 Beltman concurred. He had never seen any scientific data  
 6 that would show any adverse health effects caused by  
 7 contamination--contamination from Petroleum Operations in  
 8 the Oriente.

9 Now, Members of the Tribunal, these candid  
 10 assessments of the lack of data to prove widespread  
 11 contamination and human health risks from the Lago  
 12 Plaintiffs' experts themselves is perfectly consistent  
 13 with the findings of the Chevron experts from the Lago  
 14 Case, many of whom are now experts in this arbitration  
 15 case.

16 And for the convenience of the Tribunal, I have  
 17 summarized who those experts are and their critical  
 18 findings on this slide.

19 Most important and collectively, they establish  
 20 that there is no legitimate scientific basis for the  
 21 Judgment or any of the damage awards in the Judgment.  
 22 What they do tell us is that TexPet performed the Remedial  
 23 Action Plan, but that Petroecuador has yet to complete its  
 24 share of the remediation work. And for that reason, we  
 25 will find that there are areas within the former

12:29 1 Tribunal, respectfully, that is simply not the case. On  
 2 this slide I quote from the LBG Report where they say:  
 3 "The Judgment's assessment of damages was reasonable," and  
 4 yet in the four reports that they have issued and I have  
 5 put on this slide, not one of those Reports do they offer  
 6 any endorsement of any of the damage awards in the  
 7 Judgment. Not one of those reports and not one of the  
 8 damage awards do they support.

9 Now, they dodge this issue by saying, well,  
 10 quantum is reserved for Track 3, but Members of the  
 11 Tribunal, this is not about quantum. This is about  
 12 Claimants' case, which has now been fully established,  
 13 that the amount of these Judgments--the damages in the  
 14 Judgment, the damage awards themselves, are so excessive  
 15 and unreasonable that they constitute a denial of justice,  
 16 and that's the case that has been established by Claimants  
 17 and their Experts, and that issue is completely unanswered  
 18 by Ecuador's new Experts in this arbitration case.

19 A second major flaw in the work of Ecuador's  
 20 Environmental Experts is that they completely ignore the  
 21 Settlement Agreement and Remedial Action Plan by their own  
 22 admission, claiming it to be irrelevant. They ignore that  
 23 critical framework that should be considered in assessing  
 24 whose activities caused a particular impact.

25 Third key flaw in their work is that they also

12:30 1 ignore the operations and environmental impacts of  
 2 Petroecuador, admitting as they say in this excerpt from  
 3 their Report they've made no effort to try and allocate  
 4 pollution liability between TexPet and Petroecuador.  
 5 But, Members of the Tribunal, as you know,  
 6 Petroecuador has, indeed, operated these oil fields for  
 7 the last 25 years with great effect. I am going to show  
 8 you now an image or a screenshot from Claimant's mapping  
 9 tool, C-2444. And I would ask to draw your attention to  
 10 the screen.  
 11 In green, you see the green icons represent the  
 12 well platforms that were constructed by the Consortium  
 13 through 1990. Now, if you watch the screen, you will see  
 14 the new red--the red icons represent the new wells that  
 15 had been constructed by Petroecuador and/or Ecuador's  
 16 State-owned oil companies since 1990. And as you can see  
 17 with your own eyes, the operations of Petroecuador in the  
 18 last 25 years have overwhelmed those of TexPet.  
 19 Now, taking this point and going from a high  
 20 level to the facts on the ground, what do we know about  
 21 Petroecuador's operations? Well, we know that  
 22 Petroecuador has operated nearly every single facility  
 23 that TexPet ever operated, almost all the well platforms  
 24 and, indeed, every production station. We also know from  
 25 its own publicly available information that Petroecuador

12:34 1 I have provided for you the key fact, and that is whether  
 2 Petroecuador has operated these 13 sites or in any way,  
 3 form or fashion touched them. And the truth is, Members  
 4 of the Tribunal, when you look at the record evidence that  
 5 is in this case, we find that Petroecuador has had some  
 6 touch, some operation, some activity, at every one of  
 7 these 13 sites. So they can in no way be classified as  
 8 TexPet only sites.  
 9 And then when we look at the question of where  
 10 were the samples taken? Were they taken from areas that  
 11 TexPet remediated, those RAP areas, or were they taken  
 12 from areas that TexPet was not responsible for remediating  
 13 those non-RAP areas? Well, from these 13 sites, LBG,  
 14 Ecuador's Expert, sampled in 32 areas, and of those 32  
 15 areas, 28 of them are non-RAP areas, for which TexPet had  
 16 no remediation responsibility whatsoever.  
 17 So, this limited dataset tells us absolutely  
 18 nothing about the remediation work of TexPet. If it tells  
 19 us anything at all, it's simply about areas within the  
 20 Concession Area that Petroecuador has yet to address.  
 21 Moving then on to the next major problem with the  
 22 Ecuador expert's new work to try and make their case of  
 23 widespread contamination and human health risk, they have  
 24 to resort to extreme measures in terms of sampling  
 25 protocols and protocols for how human health risk is

12:32 1 has spilled over 125,000 barrels of oil throughout the  
 2 Concession Area just through the Year 2009. And on an  
 3 annual basis, it conducts over 338 well workovers at the  
 4 platforms which create opportunities for spills on and off  
 5 the platforms.  
 6 So, faced with this overwhelming record of  
 7 impacts by Petroecuador, Ecuador's new experts purported  
 8 to collect new samples from areas that they characterized  
 9 as "TexPet only." But this exercise on their part is  
 10 flawed for many reasons and deserves no weight by the  
 11 Tribunal.  
 12 Some of the problems with this recently acquired  
 13 data are listed here, perhaps the most important of which  
 14 is that it was never available to the Lago Court. This is  
 15 again evidence outside of the Lago record now being  
 16 offered to justify in a post hoc fashion the validity of  
 17 the Lago Judgment. It simply fails. But even to the  
 18 extent that the Tribunal were to consider this data, it's  
 19 very problematic because of the manner in which it was  
 20 collected. It's a very limited and biased data set. And  
 21 notwithstanding how it's been characterized by Ecuador and  
 22 its Experts from TexPet-only areas, the opposite is true.  
 23 On this slide, I have listed the 13 sites where  
 24 Ecuador's Expert LBG took new samples and the areas where  
 25 they sampled at each site. And then in the third column,

12:36 1 calculated. There are many problems with their work, and  
 2 I've summarize just a few here on this slide. But I leave  
 3 you with this point of common sense: Does it really make  
 4 sense that new experts coming to this Concession Area, 25  
 5 years after TexPet left it, that they could possibly find  
 6 data to prove wide spread contamination and human health  
 7 risk when the Lago Plaintiffs' multiple groups of Experts  
 8 couldn't do that? It makes no sense. And when you put a  
 9 microscope to the work done by the Ecuador's experts new  
 10 work, you find it will not withstand scientific scrutiny.  
 11 The last point on this slide is the one I want to  
 12 go to next. And that is the critical question, the  
 13 important question of human health risk.  
 14 Although Ecuador's expert, Dr. Harlee Strauss,  
 15 purports to calculate human health risk, I want to explain  
 16 to the Tribunal that when you evaluate the epidemiologic  
 17 evidence between exposure to petroleum compounds in the  
 18 Oriente and adverse human health effects, when you do it  
 19 using valid and widely accepted scientific protocols, as  
 20 Claimant's epidemiologist, Dr. Moolgavkar, has done, you  
 21 find there is no causal relationship between exposure to  
 22 conditions in the Oriente and adverse human health  
 23 effects.  
 24 I would note that Dr. Moolgavkar is the only  
 25 expert who has actually done his study and published it.

12:37 1 It's been subject to peer review. And then when you take  
 2 the judicial inspection data from the Lago Case and you  
 3 apply it to a quantitative risk assessment Protocol, as  
 4 Claimants' risk assessment and toxicologist expert,  
 5 Dr. Tom McHugh, has done, you will also find from a  
 6 quantitative perspective, there is no adverse human health  
 7 effects to people in the Oriente based on the data that  
 8 was collected during the Lago Case.

9 Now, contrary to these findings by these two  
 10 highly qualified experts, Ecuador offers the testimony of  
 11 Dr. Harlee Strauss and they characterize her opinions has  
 12 having established "widespread human health risk from  
 13 TexPet's operations." But, Members of the Tribunal, the  
 14 facts are, when we give a critical evaluation to her work,  
 15 we see just the opposite. If anything, she confirms the  
 16 absence of human health risk for these reasons: First,  
 17 she admits in her reports that she has no proof of any  
 18 actual cancer or non-cancer health impacts to any person,  
 19 any family or any neighborhood in the Oriente in the  
 20 former Concession Area.

21 So, at most, what she is able to do is calculate  
 22 a theoretical health risk, and she does that based only on  
 23 the recently acquired data that LBG collected. And even  
 24 then, only at limited pockets of nine sites--nine of 344  
 25 Concession sites--there are many problems and flaws with

12:39 1 her calculations, as you will be hearing in the coming  
 2 weeks. But even those calculations are very limited and  
 3 depart from widely accepted methods.

4 But even if the Tribunal were to give them any  
 5 weight at all, they are based only on data from non-RAP  
 6 areas. She does not calculate a human health risk from  
 7 any area, any RAP area, that TexPet remediated.

8 Now, her findings of an absence of health risk  
 9 based on the quantitative data actually correspond  
 10 perfectly with the opinion of her colleague Dr. Grandiean,  
 11 Ecuador's epidemiologist, who in his very first report  
 12 after assessing the epidemiologic evidence, he too had to  
 13 confess and acknowledge an absence of evidence to support  
 14 any association between exposure to conditions in the  
 15 Oriente and adverse health effects, though he urged the  
 16 Tribunal to set aside that absence of evidence.

17 But Members of the Tribunal, as you know from  
 18 your own experience, your own common sense, an absence of  
 19 evidence is no evidence at all to support the health  
 20 awards in the Judgment. And in a broader sense, that  
 21 absence of evidence that we find from Ecuador's health  
 22 related Experts characterizes the weight of the evidence  
 23 that was in the Lago record about the fact that there is a  
 24 lack of human health risk proven from exposure to  
 25 conditions in the Oriente and actual adverse health

12:41 1 effects.

2 What I have summarized for you on this last slide  
 3 and given you an enlarged copy of, are the expert reports  
 4 that came from multiple sources and that were available in  
 5 the Lago Case except for the new reports that had been  
 6 submitted in this BIT arbitration.

7 You don't have to take Chevron's word for it.  
 8 You don't have to rely only on the Chevron experts. What  
 9 you find is a body of expert reports, many of which were  
 10 placed in the Lago record and which come from the Lago  
 11 Plaintiffs' experts themselves, which come from the  
 12 Sacha 53 settling experts appointed by the Court, and  
 13 which even come from some of Ecuador's own environmental  
 14 investigation agencies. When you look at all of their  
 15 work and you see that it's--I've organized their reports  
 16 according to these key findings, we find an absence of  
 17 evidence to support any claim of widespread contamination  
 18 or human health risk, and for those reasons we can see  
 19 that the damages awarded in the Judgment have no  
 20 scientific basis and represent a denial of justice.

21 And with that, I will hand it over to my  
 22 colleague, Mr. Paulsson, who will further discuss the  
 23 denial of justice and the violation of the Bilateral  
 24 Investment Treaty.

25 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you very much.

12:42 1 Mr. Paulsson.

2 MR. PAULSSON: Members of the Tribunal, let's try  
 3 to put this concatenation of outrages into some kind of a  
 4 conceptual framework that shows us where all this will  
 5 lead. I will seek to deal, in sequence, with three aspects  
 6 of denial of justice: the legal standard, the ripeness of  
 7 Chevron's claim and its merits.

8 I will also remind you of Ecuador's breaches of  
 9 specific provisions of the BIT.

10 As shown by the evidence summarized this morning,  
 11 the meltdown of the rule of law in Ecuador has left a  
 12 depressing wasteland saturated with the five types of  
 13 poison listed on the slide. What is the applicable  
 14 international law standard? Many formulations seeking to  
 15 define denial of justice were quoted in my Reports filed  
 16 earlier in this case. I should pause to note that in  
 17 light of the Tribunal's invitation that I join Counsel  
 18 table, those reports are obviously not evidence and, as  
 19 was confirmed in the Claimants' letter of June the 2nd,  
 20 2014, are not being cited as evidence, but, of course, the  
 21 Claimants continue to rely on the Legal Authorities  
 22 referred to.

23 One general formulation is that of the  
 24 International Court of Justice in Barcelona Traction.  
 25 Denial of justice occurs in the case of such acts as

12:43 1 corruption, threats, unwarrantable delays, flagrant abuse  
 2 of judicial procedure, a Judgment dictated by the  
 3 Executives or so manifestly unjust that no court which was  
 4 both competent and honest could have given it.  
 5 It seems particularly useful, though, to consider  
 6 formulations that pertain to the specific manifestations  
 7 of denial of justice in this case: First, bias against  
 8 foreign litigants. In his well-known treatise on the  
 9 diplomatic rights of citizens abroad, Edwin Borchard wrote  
 10 that customary international law guarantees aliens "fair  
 11 courts, readily open to aliens, administering justice  
 12 honestly, impartially, without bias or political control."  
 13 A second type of denial of justice, very  
 14 pertinent here, is the refusal to address and correct  
 15 evidence of malfeasance. The proposition that this is an  
 16 international delict has venerable antecedents. To take  
 17 just one example, in 1886, the Commissioner in Coles and  
 18 Crosswell found that a Haitian Court denied justice when it  
 19 refused to annul a conviction for theft that resulted from  
 20 a corrupt process.  
 21 Closer to us in time, the European Court of Human  
 22 Rights has consistently found countries to be in breach of  
 23 the European Convention if their Appellate Courts do not  
 24 have the power to correct First Instance Decisions tainted  
 25 by bias. I refer you to the Kingsley case, whereas here

12:45 1 complaint is made of a lack of impartiality in the  
 2 first-instances court, the reviewing Court must not only  
 3 consider the complaint, but have the ability to quash the  
 4 impugned decision. That should certainly ring a bell with  
 5 anyone familiar with the record in this case.  
 6 A third type of denial of justice: Improper  
 7 influence by the Executive Branch. You have some  
 8 citations on this slide, I hope. Note that one single  
 9 letter evidencing undue influence was enough to condemn  
 10 the Respondent in Petrobart versus the Kyrgyz Republic.  
 11 Compare that with President Correa's constant and  
 12 relentless public diatribes against Chevron and his  
 13 emphatic resolute, triumphant endorsement of the Lago  
 14 Agrio Judgment.  
 15 And, finally, a fourth type of denial of justice:  
 16 The egregious misapplication of law, the legal absurdities  
 17 discussed by Mr. Coriell, or an outcome manifestly  
 18 inconsistent with the evidence before the Court, the  
 19 factual absurdities discussed by Ms. Renfro.  
 20 Flawed legal analysis and factual findings can,  
 21 to use Fitzmaurice's words, evidence a decision which no  
 22 honest and competent Court could possibly have given. And  
 23 as held in the case of the Oriente, a decision given in  
 24 direct opposition to so strong a preponderance of the  
 25 evidence of testimony cannot be entitled to respect. It

12:46 1 indicates strongly a pre-determination on the part of the  
 2 Judge. I now turn to ripeness.  
 3 Despite the numerous and gross violations of due  
 4 process embodied in the Lago Agrio Judgment, despite the  
 5 failure of Ecuador's higher courts to correct or even  
 6 consider them, and despite the ongoing efforts of the  
 7 Correa administration to have the Judgment enforced abroad  
 8 as a matter of declared highest policy priority, Ecuador  
 9 insists that Chevron has yet to suffer any cognizable  
 10 injury and that further remedies remain to be pursued  
 11 within Ecuador. It's preposterous. The refusal of the  
 12 higher courts to consider the evidence of fraud is itself a  
 13 freestanding denial of justice. It's grotesque to present  
 14 it as a justification for now sending Chevron on a wild  
 15 goose chase under something called the Collusion  
 16 Prosecution Act.  
 17 The denial of justice here was consummated when  
 18 the Appellate Court in willful disregard of your Interim  
 19 Measures Awards affirmed and certified the Judgment as  
 20 enforceable in Ecuador and, more to the point, abroad.  
 21 This proposition is at the heart of the case.  
 22 As Sir Hersch Lauterpacht wrote in his Separate  
 23 Opinion in the Norwegian Loans Case, the requirement of  
 24 exhaustion of remedies is not a purely technical or rigid  
 25 rule. It is a rule which international tribunals have

12:48 1 applied with a considerable degree of elasticity. The  
 2 inquiry is inherently contextual. May I, therefore, ask  
 3 you to put yourself in the Chevron's position on the  
 4 3rd of January 2012. That was the day when the Appellate  
 5 Court in question, namely the Provincial Court of Justice  
 6 of Sucumbios, wholeheartedly affirmed Judge Zambrano's  
 7 Judgment.  
 8 Let us engage in a mental exercise. You're  
 9 Chevron, 11 months ago you had been ordered to pay billions  
 10 of dollars on the basis of the say-so of a dishonest man  
 11 wearing the robes of a judge, an opaque and interminable  
 12 Judgment with not the slightest demonstration of exactly  
 13 how the preposterously successful Plaintiffs had proven any  
 14 damage whatsoever as a matter of elementary causation. Let  
 15 alone how this added up to such a breathtaking amount.  
 16 You might have thought that this robed judge would  
 17 be disavowed by any responsible public authority. The  
 18 purpose of the exhaustion of remedies rule is to give the  
 19 State in question the opportunity to disown the aberration  
 20 and to nullify its effect on the victim. Frighteningly  
 21 while statements by the President of the country would have  
 22 made you nervous, particularly given the many reports of  
 23 neutral international observers to the effect that the  
 24 judiciary is an instrument of executive dictats. But  
 25 today, on the 3rd of January 2012, is the opportunity for

12:50 1 Ecuador as a subject of international law to come to its  
 2 senses through its appellate jurisdiction. Here is the  
 3 test that matters: Does the rule of law obtain in Ecuador?  
 4 I'll ask for your worst fears to come to reality, the  
 5 Judgment is blithely affirmed in its entirety, every jot  
 6 and tittle. Ecuador has no intention of disowning it.  
 7 From the President who uses Texaco as his whipping  
 8 boy on his weekly basis, to every single official who has  
 9 had the occasion to consider the iniquity of the Lago Agrio  
 10 Judgment but instead lauded it, Ecuador has plainly  
 11 indicated that there will be no remedy for Chevron.  
 12 This process of ratification starts with the  
 13 appellate Judgment, so let me remind you of a few of its  
 14 depressing elements.  
 15 First, the Appellate Court did not purport to  
 16 reassess the evidence independently as a court of appeal,  
 17 but instead deferred to the ostensible sound judgment, sana  
 18 critica, of Zambrano in all material respects. Let me  
 19 quote from Page 12. Article 115 of the Code of Civil  
 20 Procedures states that evidence must be assessed as a whole  
 21 pursuant to the rules of a sound judicial Judgment. In the  
 22 present case, the trial court has complied with the  
 23 provision just mentioned.  
 24 And now, Page 8. In the division's estimation,  
 25 what the trial judge did in the appeal Judgment was exactly

12:51 1 this: Consider the evidence as a whole and not just the  
 2 documentary evidence that the Defendant demands, and  
 3 establish the facts in an indisputable and conclusive  
 4 manner.  
 5 More from Page 12: It is the collection of  
 6 information coming from various sources that undoubtedly  
 7 has created in the trial judge the conviction of the  
 8 existence of damage, allowing him at the same time to have  
 9 a minimal margin of error in applying the interpretation  
 10 method of sound discretion to assess scientific evidence.  
 11 And moving over to Page 13: The appeal Judgment  
 12 proposed the detailed appraisal of all the body of evidence  
 13 and finds the existence of environmental damages legally  
 14 proved. The division considers the lower court's appraisal  
 15 in this part to be coherent and of good legal logical  
 16 judgment because it stems from the body of evidence  
 17 presented in the trial to which the trial court referred  
 18 precisely.  
 19 In sum, the Appellate Court deferred to the  
 20 ghostwritten Judgment on all counts. You will search in  
 21 vain in the Appellate Judgment for words like, for example,  
 22 "soil" or "water" for any weighing of the evidence, for any  
 23 justification of the billions awarded in damages except  
 24 assertion. The appeals judges might have just as well  
 25 written this: The deed is done. Let's not get involved.

12:53 1 Or, as the French say, courage, fuyons!  
 2 Second, the Appellate Court stated that it had no  
 3 competence to consider Chevron's evidence of fraud in the  
 4 procurement of that Judgment, although it provided no  
 5 explanation for this apparent paralysis. That's the bell I  
 6 hope I rang when I referred to the European Court of Human  
 7 Rights Judgment a few moments ago.  
 8 But the Plaintiffs were not satisfied with the  
 9 Appellate Court acting as Pontius Pilate. They wanted to  
 10 act as a subservient accessory. So, they asked the Court  
 11 for a clarification to explain that when it said we have no  
 12 competence, it actually meant that it had, in fact,  
 13 considered and rejected the evidence of fraud. All right.  
 14 Thank you very much, responded the Appellate Court. That's  
 15 exactly what we meant to say. And so the clarification  
 16 order transformed no competence into the obedient finding  
 17 that, yes, such allegations have been considered, but no  
 18 reliable evidence of any crime has been found.  
 19 This all speaks for itself, except to note that  
 20 the Appellate Court's contradictory ipse dixit was too  
 21 outrageous even for the National Court of Justice, which  
 22 preferred the lesser outrage--but still an outrage--of  
 23 evasion. When it got ahold of the case, it ruled that the  
 24 Court reviewing Zambrano's bombshell of a judgment after  
 25 all did not have the authority to consider whether it was

12:54 1 fraudulent, and that was dispositive.  
 2 The assertion of impotence from both the Appellate  
 3 Court and the National Court of Justice are on the slides.  
 4 At this moment, your Tribunal enters center stage.  
 5 You had already heard the Parties on the issue of  
 6 whether irreparable harm would arise if Ecuador allowed the  
 7 tainted Judgment to set sail around the world.  
 8 On the 16th of February, 2012, you issued the  
 9 second Award on Interim Measures. In the fact of the  
 10 Appellate Decision, this decision strengthened your earlier  
 11 directive, moving from ordering Ecuador to take all  
 12 measures at its disposal to prevent enforcement, now for it  
 13 to take all measures necessary--necessary--to suspend or  
 14 cause to be suspended the enforcement and recognition  
 15 within and without Ecuador of the Judgments. This imposed  
 16 an obligation of result.  
 17 What did the judges of the Sucumbios Court do?  
 18 The very next day, February 17th, the Provincial Court of  
 19 Justice of Sucumbios declared the Judgment to be  
 20 enforceable. On March 1st, the Court attempted to justify  
 21 its recalcitrance on the odd and unexplained ground that  
 22 its immediate enforcement was required by human rights  
 23 principles, an argument that popped up, it seems, like a  
 24 Jack-in-the-Box. I quote: "The members of the division  
 25 have no obligation to assume this responsibility under

12:56 1 orders from a commercial arbitration panel who do not  
 2 consider the conflict of international obligations they  
 3 generate by ordering measures that restrict human rights."  
 4 Two days later, on March 3rd, Correa publicly  
 5 condemned the Tribunal's Second Interim Award. He said  
 6 this: "And now a United Nations arbitration center,  
 7 invoking the Bilateral Investment Treaty dated 1997, is  
 8 trying to stay the sentence. They're setting in motion the  
 9 UN itself to carry out a judicial monstrosity according to  
 10 their interests. This is very serious, fellow countrymen.  
 11 very serious."  
 12 Correa elaborated his meaning in a July 2013  
 13 speech to ALBA. Referring to your Interim Measures Award,  
 14 he said: "This is outrageous. This is intolerable. These  
 15 are the mechanisms of a new empire, the empire of capital,  
 16 the new imperialism, or a double standard of boundless  
 17 hypocrisy, using these international forums, arbitrations  
 18 completely biased, corrupt arbitrators, to try and force  
 19 our countries into submission."  
 20 I've tried in vain to understand on what basis  
 21 Correa could declare urbi et orbi that Messrs. Veeder,  
 22 Grigera Naón and Lowe are corrupt arbitrators. The only  
 23 answer seems to be that he is the President and has the  
 24 power to designate the guilty without explanation. I  
 25 shudder to think what he makes of advocates who are not

12:57 1 convinced by his rhetoric.  
 2 All of this confirms the existence of a  
 3 consummated delict. Professor Fawcett wrote in the British  
 4 Yearbook in 1954: "The exhaustion of local remedies is  
 5 necessary to establish beyond doubt that the wrongful act  
 6 or denial of justice complained of is the deliberate act of  
 7 the State, and that it is willing to leave the wrong  
 8 unrighted."  
 9 Ask yourself the question: When has the State as  
 10 a system, as an institution, made clear that it has no  
 11 interest in correcting the outlandish denial of justice in  
 12 progress? It is an uncontestable fact that Ecuador has  
 13 never signified anything but a constant, explicit, indeed,  
 14 militant refusal to acknowledge or correct the wrongdoing.  
 15 And this comes from the Head of State, again and again,  
 16 ever more stridently. Praising the Zambrano Judgment as  
 17 the most important in the nation's history. Branding  
 18 lawyers who advised Chevron of its rights as vende patrias.  
 19 When is enough enough? When does a State lose the occasion  
 20 international law gives it to undo a denial of justice?  
 21 When is a denial of justice a deliberate act of the State,  
 22 as Fawcett put it? When--what does one need more once the  
 23 head of State has spoken and plainly articulated his  
 24 contempt for international legal obligations?  
 25 Isn't there a world of difference between, on the

12:59 1 one hand, a routine first-instance Judgment which has been  
 2 decided in disregard of an alien's right to due process but  
 3 which has attracted no attention at all by higher national  
 4 authorities of any stripe, and, on the other hand, an  
 5 instance of denial of justice which the Head of State hails  
 6 as the most important judgment in the history of his  
 7 country?  
 8 The difference becomes even starker when the  
 9 Judgment is dutifully affirmed on appeal without any  
 10 consideration of the evidence that it was procured by  
 11 fraud. When that Judgment is certified as enforceable in  
 12 contravention of a binding order of an international  
 13 tribunal and when the effective enforcement of that  
 14 judgment around the world has been declared a matter of  
 15 priority governmental policy, why are not the unequivocal  
 16 statements of the Head of State in a country with a  
 17 subjugated judiciary a sufficient and conclusive indication  
 18 of the State's lack of interest in any opportunity to  
 19 correct a Judgment of which it is, to the contrary, very  
 20 proud?  
 21 Why is it not decisive that the head of State  
 22 disaffirms any intention to countenance reconsideration?  
 23 Exporting the Judgment outside Ecuador was  
 24 certainly a dispositive event. Ecuador's courts have no  
 25 jurisdiction beyond the country's borders. They cannot

01:00 1 reverse a foreign court's decision to freeze assets or to  
 2 enforce the Lago Agrio Judgment.  
 3 And so, your Tribunal recognized that Chevron  
 4 faced irreparable harm when--when--the Ecuadorian judiciary  
 5 declared the Judgment to be enforceable. You recognized  
 6 this when you granted Interim Measures to prevent that  
 7 eventuality. And this is what you wrote: There are  
 8 increasingly grave risks that enforcement and execution of  
 9 the Lago Agrio Judgment against the First Claimant with its  
 10 subsidiary companies will imperil to a very significant  
 11 extent the overall fairness and the efficacy of these  
 12 arbitration proceedings.  
 13 The Declaration of the Judgment's enforceability  
 14 did two things: It exacerbated the injury to Chevron and  
 15 it rendered the Ecuadorian system powerless to correct it.  
 16 With the remaining avenues of recourse rendered  
 17 ineffective, Ecuador attracted international  
 18 responsibility.  
 19 Gentlemen, as of this moment, there is no room  
 20 left for the exhaustion of Ecuadorian remedies. The  
 21 \$9 billion Judgment has been set loose like noxious spores  
 22 and it is no longer within Ecuador's power to contain them.  
 23 To use the words of the Ambatielos Tribunal,  
 24 "Remedies which could not rectify the situation cannot be  
 25 relied upon by the Defendant State as precluding an

01:01 1 international action."  
 2 Now, Ecuador's inconsistent versions about what  
 3 additional recourse should have been pursued are quite  
 4 revealing. Let me explain. After the Appellate Court's  
 5 decision of January 3, 2012, Chevron filed a cassation  
 6 petition to the National Court of Justice. In February  
 7 of 2013, while cassation was pending, Ecuador, in its  
 8 Track 2 Counter-Memorial on the Merits, confirmed that this  
 9 was the proper course, and that Chevron could have its due  
 10 process complaints heard by that National Court of Justice  
 11 and subsequently the Constitutional Court.  
 12 This is what Ecuador told you. There are two  
 13 effective remedies available to Chevron that it has failed  
 14 to exhaust: Appeal to the National Court of Justice, which  
 15 is currently pending. If that is denied, also an  
 16 extraordinary action before the Constitutional Court. Like  
 17 the National Court of Justice, the Constitutional Court can  
 18 overturn the Lago Agrio Judgment. That's what they told  
 19 you.  
 20 But the National Court of Justice, in its decision  
 21 later that year affirming the merits of this Judgment,  
 22 contrary to what Ecuador told you, stated that it did not  
 23 have the authority to address fraud and, thus, affirmed  
 24 without any inquiry into the Judgment's bona fides and thus  
 25 disregarded the dossiers presented by Chevron. So much for

01:03 1 that remedy.  
 2 Now what did Ecuador do in these proceedings? It  
 3 instantly backtracked. In its Track 2 Rejoinder, having  
 4 never so much as whispered of it before, Ecuador proclaimed  
 5 that the only possible recourse for judicial fraud all  
 6 along had been something called a Collusion Prosecution Act  
 7 claim, a separate and collateral action against Zambrano  
 8 himself. How amazing is that? Would Ecuador's counsel  
 9 with a straight face say that you haven't exhausted  
 10 recourse against, let us say, Barclay's Bank, until you  
 11 have brought a personal tort action against the Branch  
 12 Manager who executed your purchase of the shares that went  
 13 down? For that matter, do they see no irony in faulting  
 14 Chevron for pursuing the very recourse that they once  
 15 insisted was the proper path?  
 16 The CPA, the Collusion Prosecution Act, was first  
 17 brought on stage as a deus ex machina by the National Court  
 18 of Justice in an attempt to justify its claimed paralysis.  
 19 It was an afterthought, a fig leaf. As a purported remedy,  
 20 it fails at several levels.  
 21 For one thing, although Ecuador seems to posit a  
 22 CPA claim against Zambrano, this would not address the full  
 23 measure of the delict, which goes well beyond the  
 24 ghostwritten Judgment itself. Consider the falsified  
 25 Calmbacher Report. The Cabrera fraud. The Government's

01:04 1 anti-Chevron extortion campaign. With different actors  
 2 involved in the separate facets of this expansive fraud,  
 3 Chevron would need to bring not one but several independent  
 4 actions under the CPA.  
 5 Ecuador's 11th-hour remedy thus stands athwart  
 6 international law which does not require Claimants to  
 7 pursue oblique and collateral avenues of relief. Something  
 8 as serious as fraud in the Judgment must, in any  
 9 functioning system, be a central issue on direct appeal, if  
 10 not the central issue.  
 11 The refusal of the appellate and cassation courts  
 12 to consider Chevron's evidence of fraud cannot be  
 13 reconciled moreover with Ecuador's *lex specialis* promise to  
 14 provide effective means for the vindication of rights as  
 15 set forth in Article II(7) of the BIT.  
 16 Both Parties agree furthermore that the doctrine  
 17 of *ultima ratio* applies here, meaning that actions under  
 18 the CPA are available only where there is no other  
 19 potential recourse. As explained by Dr. Coronel, one of  
 20 the experts on Ecuadorian law whom Ecuador has not chosen  
 21 to call here, the Appellate Court had--he's very clear on  
 22 this--the Appellate Court had the constitutional power and  
 23 duty to consider the evidence of fraud presented by  
 24 Chevron.  
 25 In its Rejoinder, Chevron does not dispute the

01:06 1 import of constitutional commands such as the right to a  
 2 fair and transparent proceeding. It instead attempts to  
 3 delineate a point of procedure and a footnote, Footnote  
 4 116: If evidence of the fraud is contained within the case  
 5 record itself, the Appellate Court, it says, can consider  
 6 it. If instead the evidence of fraud is extrinsic to the  
 7 case record, the only recourse is the CPA.  
 8 In other words, Ecuador concedes that Chevron  
 9 would have satisfied the exhaustion requirements with its  
 10 direct appeal if only the proof of malfeasance here were  
 11 contained in the record of the case itself.  
 12 What type of system is this? The fraudulent  
 13 Judgment does not speak its name. The guilty party doesn't  
 14 produce evidence of the fraud because it wants the fraud to  
 15 be successful. The innocent party does not produce it  
 16 because the fraud is secret, and it is ignorant of it. At  
 17 least in theory, furthermore, the Constitution of Ecuador  
 18 is supreme and must be applied directly, not subordinated  
 19 to rules of procedure. This is just double speak. Ecuador  
 20 is unable to cite any authority or any examples of this  
 21 esoteric distinction.  
 22 Let us nonetheless accept *arguendo* Ecuador's  
 23 unattractive assumption that its judicial system positively  
 24 prevents appellate courts, as a matter of procedure, from  
 25 considering whether the judgment under review was corrupt,



01:07 1 procured by fraud. Even under this dubious hypothesis, it  
 2 is undisputed by Ecuador that the CPA Court could  
 3 not--cannot--stay enforcement of the underlying judgment  
 4 during its review. Page 39 of the Rejoinder. That makes  
 5 this already implausible remedy perfectly pointless.  
 6 Chevron, please recall, did try to stay  
 7 enforcement. But its entreaties were rejected by both the  
 8 Appellate Court and the National Court of Justice. Without  
 9 a stay, the CPA is not a remedy. It's a detour, and a  
 10 lengthy one at that.  
 11 Ecuador concedes that it typically takes almost a  
 12 year-and-a-half just to get a first instance judgment under  
 13 the CPA--Page 40 of the Rejoinder. That would be followed  
 14 by several more years of appeals which, in this case, would  
 15 go to the very same appellate courts, appellate and  
 16 cassation courts, that emphatically affirmed the  
 17 multi-billion dollar Judgment in the first place without  
 18 showing any interest in the proof of its corrupt origin.  
 19 Ecuador's suggestion of sending Chevron down the  
 20 CPA rabbit hole is perfidious. It would serve to tie the  
 21 hands of this Tribunal for several years while President  
 22 Correa continues his campaign to promote the Judgment's  
 23 enforcement abroad. International law is not so amemic.  
 24 Recall here that in addition to pursuing recourse  
 25 before the National Court of Justice and the Constitutional

01:09 1 Court, as Ecuador once recommended, Chevron transmitted  
 2 evidence of fraud to the Office of the Prosecutor General  
 3 as it became available. As Mr. Bishop recounted, while  
 4 Chevron has been accused by the Prosecutor General of  
 5 malicious--of making reckless and malicious accusations, no  
 6 action has been taken against any of the Ecuadorians  
 7 implicated by the evidence.  
 8 For the most part, the Prosecutor General has been  
 9 content to simply ignore the evidence presented to him.  
 10 But in September 2013, he took the unusual step of actually  
 11 rejecting and returning three boxes of Judgment  
 12 ghostwriting evidence, stating, as if it were an  
 13 explanation, that the case in question is a civil  
 14 proceeding in which the Prosecutor General office does not  
 15 participate. No interest in criminal activity. That's  
 16 Exhibit C-2305.  
 17 The official investigations of the Office of the  
 18 Prosecutor General does continue to languish, going nowhere  
 19 slowly. This is an exercise in hypocrisy. There are, in  
 20 short, no effective remedies in Ecuador for the injuries  
 21 Chevron has suffered and may suffer as a result of  
 22 Ecuador's breach of the Tribunal's Interim Awards. And  
 23 this, of course, assumes that Chevron is running on a dry  
 24 race track when it steps into an Ecuadorian court room, as  
 25 to which I hardly need say anything at all.

01:10 1 As has been well documented in this arbitration,  
 2 after ten years of repeated restructurings and removals,  
 3 the judiciary is now securely under the thumb of the  
 4 President. Although Ecuador attempts to spin the  
 5 successive reorganizations as progressive reform, they have  
 6 only further destabilized the judiciary and allowed for  
 7 greater political intervention through various removals and  
 8 appointments. Recall the statistics: Two-thirds of the  
 9 Ecuadorian judiciary sanctioned by either removal,  
 10 suspension, fines or reprimands in the course of 18 months  
 11 in the Years 2011 and 2012.  
 12 You may have heard the proverb, perhaps unfairly  
 13 attributed to the Chinese, but certainly an ultimate  
 14 manifestation of Machiavellian thought: Kill one, warn a  
 15 hundred. Judges know full well the personal and  
 16 professional risks they would be taking if they were to  
 17 rule against the Government's interests. This is doubtless  
 18 what Donziger told his friends--that the trial and  
 19 appellate judges hearing the Lago Agrio Case don't have to  
 20 be intelligent enough to understand the law, just as long  
 21 as they understand the politics.  
 22 The politics here were not difficult to  
 23 understand. Correa publicly called Chevron an enemy of the  
 24 nation. Chevron must be held liable, with a sanction to be  
 25 imposed in the hands of the courts. Enforcement of the

01:12 1 Judgment is today a matter of first priority for the  
 2 Government, and Ecuador's efforts to coerce Chevron into an  
 3 inequitable settlement continue unabated.  
 4 Earlier this month, April 8th, Correa tweeted to  
 5 an article from the Plaintiffs' NGO--that's Amazon  
 6 Watch--and wrote "the world should know Chevron, corrupt  
 7 and corrupting company."  
 8 Given the turmoil in the judiciary over the past  
 9 11 years and the direct political interference in the Lago  
 10 Agrio Case, it is risible--it is risible--for Ecuador to be  
 11 speaking of a presumption of regularity. It was precisely  
 12 the institutional weakness and corruption of the judiciary  
 13 that allowed the conspiracy between Plaintiffs and the  
 14 Correa Administration to flourish.  
 15 But the denial of justice and its consummation  
 16 does not require you to issue sweeping criticisms of  
 17 Ecuador's entire judicial system, however deserved they may  
 18 or may not be. It is more than enough to observe what the  
 19 courts have done in this case and how the highest  
 20 authorities of State have applauded their misdeeds in this  
 21 case. And how both the courts and the head of State have  
 22 shown their contempt for your Tribunal and for  
 23 international law.  
 24 Finally, some brief observations on the merits.  
 25 The details of this massive denial of justice have been set

01:13 1 out in the Memorials. I need not say very much at all,  
 2 particularly in wake of the presentations this morning.  
 3 You see key references on the following slide. Your  
 4 Tribunal also has the benefit of the decision issued by the  
 5 RICO court in New York. After conducting a seven-week  
 6 trial, Judge Kaplan meticulously documented the evidence  
 7 that led him to conclude that the decision in the Lago  
 8 Agrio Case was obtained by corrupt means.  
 9 It is noteworthy that Judge Kaplan's conclusion  
 10 was reached primarily on the strength of evidence obtained  
 11 outside of Ecuador, mostly through U.S. discovery  
 12 proceedings. That is hardly surprising but noteworthy. It  
 13 is not surprising because of Ecuador's refusal to  
 14 investigate the fraud in Ecuador. It's offered various  
 15 changing and contradictory reasons for stonewalling Chevron  
 16 in its effort to obtain relevant evidence in Ecuador. The  
 17 stance of the appellate jurisdictions has hovered over  
 18 these proceedings like something Lewis Carroll might call  
 19 the "Cheshire" remedy. You are told it's there, but when  
 20 you approach it, there is no remedy, only its mocking  
 21 smile.  
 22 Ultimately, unable to respond to the evidence that  
 23 Chevron has gathered elsewhere, Ecuador's courts sat stone  
 24 dumb. Ecuador's counsel today nitpicked feebly at the  
 25 margins of select portions of the overwhelming evidence

01:15 1 against them, but the fact is that this fraud was so big  
 2 that Chevron has remarkably been able to prove it through  
 3 evidence obtained almost exclusively outside Ecuador.  
 4 The federal judge in North Carolina who granted  
 5 Chevron the discovery into the fraud that was flatly denied  
 6 in Ecuador said that this Court must believe that the  
 7 concept of fraud is universal, and that what has blatantly  
 8 occurred in this matter would in fact be considered fraud  
 9 by any court.  
 10 Across the Atlantic, the Court in Gibraltar that  
 11 heard the case against the Plaintiffs' offshore funders  
 12 in 2014 refused to give res judicata effect to the  
 13 Ecuadorian Appellate Judgment on which Respondent places so  
 14 much reliance here, explaining that, I quote, "if the  
 15 Appeal Courts in Ecuador had anything before it like the  
 16 evidence which has been put before me, it is, indeed,  
 17 surprising on the face of it that at the least a rehearing  
 18 was not ordered. It would be difficult to have confidence  
 19 in an Appeal Court which made the findings which it did and  
 20 upheld the First Instance Decision if the Claimants'  
 21 allegations are correct."  
 22 Our written materials show that the Ecuadorian  
 23 Constitution obliged the appellate and cassation  
 24 courts--you see it on the slide--obliged the appellate and  
 25 cassation courts to address Chevron's allegations of fraud

01:16 1 and corruption. But even if the Ecuadorian Constitution  
 2 had been silent on this subject, and even if its Code of  
 3 Civil Procedure like none other in the known universe  
 4 obliges its judges to hear no evil, see no evil, speak no  
 5 evil, there has still been a denial of justice. A judicial  
 6 system that is incapable of addressing prima facie evidence  
 7 of judicial fraud falls below international standards.  
 8 That is not a legitimate appeals process. It violates any  
 9 conception of due process.  
 10 I pause to note Ecuador's remarkable assertion  
 11 that the actions of Cabrera and Zambrano cannot be  
 12 attributed to it. This ignores that all of their  
 13 malfeasance was performed in their official capacities,  
 14 Cabrera as an auxiliary of the Court, Zambrano as the  
 15 Presiding Judge.  
 16 In all events, as explained in the papers, Ecuador  
 17 is an undeniably responsible for the Judgment, that is the  
 18 sum product of their acts and omissions.  
 19 Ecuador's challenge to this Tribunal's  
 20 jurisdiction over the denial-of-justice claims is equally  
 21 frivolous. There is jurisdiction under Article VI(a)(1  
 22 (a)(3) of the BIT because the denial-of-justice claims  
 23 concerns litigation arising out of and relating to the  
 24 investment and the relevant investment agreements. That is  
 25 the 1973 Concession, the 1995 Settlement that this Tribunal

01:17 1 has held are inextricably linked.  
 2 Ecuador furthermore cannot be permitted to blow  
 3 hot and cold on Chevron's status. Having held Chevron  
 4 liable for TexPet's alleged activities under the '73  
 5 Concession on an alter ego theory, it cannot now be heard  
 6 to deny Chevron the benefits of international law attached  
 7 to that investment.  
 8 In addition to constituting a denial of justice,  
 9 Ecuador's conduct also violates other provisions of the  
 10 BIT, including effective means, Fair and Equitable  
 11 Treatment, full protection and security, arbitrary  
 12 treatment and non-discrimination. You have the relevant  
 13 pleadings--the citations to the pleadings on the slide.  
 14 Now, a discussion of the merits would be  
 15 incomplete without saying a few words about remedies.  
 16 A combination of three distinct remedies is  
 17 necessary and appropriate to address the uniquely grave  
 18 circumstances in which Chevron finds itself today.  
 19 First, because it is a denial of justice, the Lago  
 20 Agrio Judgment must be declared a nullity under customary  
 21 international law.  
 22 Second, Ecuador must be instructed to take all  
 23 measures necessary to prevent enforcement of the fraudulent  
 24 judgment in Ecuador or abroad.  
 25 Third, Chevron is entitled to the damages

01:19 1 traceable to Ecuador's breaches of international law in an  
2 amount to be determined in Track 3.  
3 Of the three requests, the first is by far the  
4 most important. As a result of Ecuador's willful breach of  
5 the Tribunal's Interim Measures Awards, Chevron now faces  
6 the threat of multiple enforcement actions around the  
7 world. The remedy must be tailored to this reality:  
8 Ecuador has made clear enough through its statements and  
9 actions on this and other arbitrations that it will not  
10 comply with international law obligations. One must  
11 therefore be realistic about the value of an injunction or  
12 of a monetary Award.  
13 You've already heard about these three remedies in  
14 the Track 1B Hearing and Mr. Kehoe will in all likelihood  
15 have more to say about them at the conclusion of this  
16 Hearing. It's basically a legal argument which does not  
17 depend in any measure on the testimonial evidence, so it  
18 naturally seems to belong in the closing arguments.  
19 But I wish to give notice that when we get there I  
20 will also ask for the opportunity to say a few words about  
21 Ecuador's remarkable effort to tempt you to conduct your  
22 own retrial of the Lago Agrio Case pursuant to what they  
23 present as their offset theory.  
24 There is no precedent for such an outlandish  
25 event, and that is hardly surprising. It would add to the

01:20 1 requirement of exhaustion of remedies, the need for the  
2 International Court or Tribunal to engage in a hypothetical  
3 reconsideration of the merits imagining how the case  
4 against the foreigner would come out if one eliminated the  
5 unfair elements.  
6 This would mean the denials of justice could be  
7 consummated without cost. Most victims do not mount  
8 international cases anyway, and if a victim did and won,  
9 all that would happen is that the case starts over again.  
10 So much is wrong with this theory that it would  
11 take more time than I have to deal with it in any detail.  
12 I will simply make one quick observation right now because  
13 it takes the problem off the table instantly: The argument  
14 in these proceedings is not ripe. The offset theory could  
15 apply only with respect to the Claimants' request for  
16 monetary damages.  
17 Of course, the prospects of Ecuador paying  
18 billions of dollars in compensation are bleak. Who could  
19 believe that Ecuador will compensate future harm that it  
20 now refuses to prevent? It's clear as day, isn't it?  
21 Through its offset theory, Ecuador is prematurely seeking a  
22 reduction in damages that it never intends to pay, but  
23 quantum has been reserved for Track 3.  
24 To conclude our presentations, I find it  
25 impossible to improve upon what Professor--now Judge--James

01:21 1 Crawford said on behalf of Chevron at a Hearing on Interim  
2 Measures held here in Washington in February 2012. This is  
3 what he said:  
4 If Ecuador had actually applied its constitutional  
5 values much flaunted during the course of this litigation,  
6 we wouldn't be in this situation. If Chevron had had the  
7 constitutional rights to an impartial and independent judge  
8 providing due process, we wouldn't be here. The same is  
9 true if the various responsible branches had investigated  
10 and prosecuted the bribery and fraud in connection with the  
11 Cabrera Report and the Judgment and thereby protected  
12 Chevron's rights as a litigant. It's precisely because  
13 Ecuador has constantly ignored its own Constitution, laws  
14 and procedures, as well as the BIT and international law,  
15 that we have been forced to bring this case.  
16 As Mr. Pate has repeatedly told this Tribunal in  
17 his various appearances before you, Chevron has no desire  
18 for conflict with any sovereign, nor can I imagine is this  
19 Tribunal anxious to find a sovereign in breach of its  
20 obligations under international law. But as Professor  
21 Crawford explained, Ecuador's conduct has left no choice.  
22 The evidence here is overwhelming and the task at hand is  
23 clear. If international law is to maintain its force and  
24 relevance, the travesty of the Lago Agrio Litigation must  
25 be condemned and sanctioned in the strongest possible

01:23 1 terms.  
2 The narrative of this case is that of a massive  
3 effort to shift liability from Petroecuador to Chevron, to  
4 ignore settlement agreements, legal requirements, basic  
5 notions of justice and fairness, all so that the State  
6 could shirk its own cleanup obligations and so that  
7 unscrupulous lawyers and their funders, aiders and abettors  
8 could make a lot of money. So, they procured the Lago  
9 Agrio Judgment.  
10 The crime against the indigenous population may be  
11 real and it may be tragic, but that crime is the  
12 indifference of a government in far-off Quito, happy to act  
13 on the principle that the subsoil hydrocarbons belong to  
14 the State and not to the local populations, with the result  
15 that very little of the riches paid to the coffers of the  
16 central government from the sale of output of the  
17 wealth--from the wells operated by Texaco, an amount which  
18 is nearly 50 times greater than the income to Texaco  
19 itself, ever made its way back to the impoverished Oriente.  
20 Now a scapegoat with deep pockets has been found,  
21 but this is a case where lawyers don't deserve their title,  
22 where supposedly independent officers of the court are for  
23 sale, and where so-called "judges" have no shame. What  
24 they gave birth to in this case cannot be called a judgment  
25 at all. It's a fraud masquerading as one.

01:24 1 And if it were allowed to stand, to play that role  
 2 as a court judgment in enforcement courts around the world,  
 3 then the U.S.-Ecuador BIT would no longer serve as a  
 4 mechanism for investment protection. Because if the BIT  
 5 cannot stop a State from destroying the value of an  
 6 investment through bribery and ghostwriting and pressure  
 7 tactics and manipulation of the judiciary, and if all this  
 8 can be shielded from the usual consequences simply because  
 9 it was accomplished partially through judicial acts, then a  
 10 State cannot not be held to its promises not to engage in  
 11 extortionate behavior of this kind. And the cost of  
 12 investment would inevitably rise, to the disadvantage of  
 13 the poor who will ultimately suffer from the erosion of the  
 14 rule of law and the drying up of foreign investment.  
 15 Is international law an illusion? Today,  
 16 gentlemen, you are its guardians.  
 17 Thank you. That concludes the Claimants' opening  
 18 presentations.  
 19 ARBITRATOR LOWE: If I can ask a question for  
 20 clarification, and you said that the denial of justice was  
 21 consummated when the Appellate Court affirmed and ratified  
 22 the Judgment as enforceable in Ecuador. And should we  
 23 understand that as meaning that, prior to the date of the  
 24 Court Judgment, January 2012, there was no denial of  
 25 justice?

01:26 1 MR. PAULSSON: Of course there was. Hence the  
 2 inquiry into whether or not there is a possibility of  
 3 reversing it. There was a denial of justice both in the  
 4 Lago Agrio Judgment and in the conduct of the State itself  
 5 in seeking to procure judgments in the conditions that I've  
 6 talked about.  
 7 ARBITRATOR LOWE: It's perhaps a point that I at  
 8 least would welcome a little more being said on when we  
 9 come to the closings, but the question of the dates at  
 10 which the breaches of the Treaty are said to have taken  
 11 place. In the light of the fact that the Notice of  
 12 Arbitration was put in in September 2009 is, I think, a  
 13 technical-legal question where I'd appreciate some guidance  
 14 from the Parties.  
 15 MR. PAULSSON: Thank you. It's noted.  
 16 PRESIDENT VEEDER: We have now come to the end of  
 17 the Claimants' opening oral submissions. We will now break  
 18 for lunch. We shall be back at 2:30 to hear the  
 19 Respondent's opening oral submissions.  
 20 (Whereupon, at 1:28 p.m., the Hearing was  
 21 adjourned until 2:30 p.m., the same day.)  
 22  
 23  
 24  
 25

1 AFTERNOON SESSION  
 2 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Let's resume.  
 3 The Respondent has the floor for its opening oral  
 4 submissions.  
 5 OPENING STATEMENT BY COUNSEL FOR RESPONDENT  
 6 MR. BLOOM: Thank you.  
 7 The Honorable Attorney General of Ecuador.  
 8 ATTORNEY GENERAL GARCÍA CARRIÓN: Thank you,  
 9 Mr. President, Members of the Tribunal.  
 10 I address you in my capacity as Attorney General  
 11 of the Republic of Ecuador, on behalf of my country, in  
 12 order to submit the Republic's arguments.  
 13 For years, my country has been portrayed by  
 14 Chevron both in this arbitration as well as in other  
 15 judicial actions related to the environmental damages in  
 16 the Ecuadorian Amazon in a manner that has no relation to  
 17 reality. The Ecuador described by Claimants within the  
 18 different scenarios of the judicial disputes and as part  
 19 of their public relations campaign is an Ecuador that only  
 20 exists in Chevron's imagination.  
 21 The truth of the matter is that Ecuador's courts  
 22 have always been available to Claimants as they have been  
 23 for any national or foreign investor, and Claimants have  
 24 availed themselves of such right, once and again not only  
 25 with respect to the environmental case, but also with

02:30 1 respect to other cases--with results which have been  
 2 favorable to Claimants.  
 3 Claimants cannot ignore their many legal  
 4 victories in Ecuador when simultaneously comparing  
 5 accusations of fraud and corruption in every single legal  
 6 defeat. At present Claimants still have a pending  
 7 extraordinary action for protection before the Ecuadorian  
 8 Constitutional Court.  
 9 And while Claimants paint Ecuador's judiciary  
 10 with a broad brush, a study made in 2014, sponsored by the  
 11 United States AID and carried out by the Latin American  
 12 Public Opinion Project found that Ecuador actually now  
 13 ranks first in South America and fifth in all of the  
 14 Americas when it comes to citizens' trust in the national  
 15 government's capacity to enforce the rule of law.  
 16 Grouping Ecuador with the United States and Canada, the  
 17 study observed, and here I quote, "that a pattern stems  
 18 out of Ecuador, consistently registering among the  
 19 region's highest levels of trust."  
 20 Notwithstanding the above, Claimants described  
 21 the judicial system in Ecuador in a manner not consistent  
 22 with reality and the existing studies using political  
 23 actors opposed to the Government as if they were impartial  
 24 legal experts; the same way as Claimants seek to portray  
 25 the distorted image of Ecuador, their description of the

02:31 1 environmental disaster in the Oriente bears little  
 2 resemblance to fact.  
 3 LBG Expert Reports submitted by Ecuador in this  
 4 arbitral proceeding showed the existence of substantial  
 5 contamination in the Ecuadorian Oriente. Notwithstanding  
 6 their claims to the contrary, an extensive portion of that  
 7 contamination is directly attributable to TexPet and  
 8 Chevron. The information obtained by the Republic's legal  
 9 representation in the 1782 actions in the United States of  
 10 America, including the written and audiovisual Registries  
 11 of the Claimants' pre-inspection of the contamination area  
 12 demonstrates Chevron's conduct both as a party to the  
 13 litigation, as well as their exploration exploitation  
 14 practices. Suffice for now to recall the existence of  
 15 thousands of pages and numerous hours of videos made  
 16 available to this Tribunal that demonstrate how Chevron  
 17 implemented a plan aimed at hiding from the Court the  
 18 environmental pollution caused by TexPet and Chevron.  
 19 Honorable Members of the Tribunal, there is an  
 20 obvious reason why Claimants opposed a site visit for so  
 21 many years. Claimants do not want this Tribunal to  
 22 evidence the reality of the contamination caused by TexPet  
 23 in the Oriente in Ecuador. The Tribunal should have the  
 24 opportunity to observe that which served as the basis for  
 25 the Ecuadorian Court's decision in the Lago Agrio

02:33 1 Litigation. The refutable evidence of the damage caused  
 2 by the Claimants, which is still visible in the region,  
 3 will be verified in the site visit scheduled for June this  
 4 year.  
 5 In 2009, when these arbitral proceedings were  
 6 initiated against the Republic, Claimants' arguments were  
 7 different, but they have mutated in such a form that their  
 8 initial claims are now unrecognizable, evidencing that  
 9 their arbitral claim was filed prematurely.  
 10 In the course of these proceedings, Claimants  
 11 have incorporated arguments about the standard of  
 12 protection and effective means, the purported  
 13 ghostwriting, and in general the denial-of-justice claims  
 14 regarding decisions that had not been issued to their  
 15 initial claim of breach of the Settlement Agreement.  
 16 Claimants now submit to this Tribunal  
 17 Mr. Guerra's testimony, who comfortably lives in the  
 18 United States at Chevron's expense, and request that this  
 19 Tribunal grounds its decision on the testimony of a person  
 20 that recognizes having changed his version of the facts in  
 21 several occasions and in whom Claimants have tried to use  
 22 as their star witness without any type of shame due to the  
 23 conditions under which he is being protected by the  
 24 Claimants. Ecuador has had to defend themselves for a  
 25 very long time during this arbitration as a result of a

02:35 1 private litigation between Chevron and the Lago Agrio  
 2 Plaintiffs, but it was TexPet and Chevron, however, who  
 3 dragged Ecuador to this dispute to which it is not a  
 4 party, and now pretending to have this dispute in  
 5 connection with public statements by Ecuadorian  
 6 authorities that have nothing to do with the  
 7 administration of justice is just another maneuver by the  
 8 Claimants that are ignoring the efforts in making any  
 9 efforts to have a negative impact on the name of Ecuador.  
 10 In the midst of all of the noise and all of the  
 11 incriminations and unfair accusations by Chevron against  
 12 Ecuador, it is all too easy to forget the fact that there  
 13 are real victims whose rights may be harmed in a  
 14 proceeding to which they are not a party, the same way as  
 15 their right to obtain reparation in the courts of the  
 16 United States was frustrated. The reality is that Chevron  
 17 and TexPet do not want that the real injured parties be  
 18 heard at all.  
 19 As we have stated repeatedly and you will hear  
 20 now, the Republic has many concerns about these  
 21 proceedings. We believe it is clear that there can be no  
 22 jurisdiction over an alleged investment dispute involving  
 23 Chevron because Chevron never invested in Ecuador. As  
 24 this Tribunal correctly found, Chevron is not a party to  
 25 an investment agreement.

02:36 1 We believe that it is equally clear under  
 2 international law that Claimants' claims are deficient  
 3 because Chevron has chosen not to exhaust the remedies  
 4 available to them in Ecuador filing the Request for  
 5 Arbitration prematurely. There can be no serious doubt  
 6 that Ecuador's collusion prosecution action act is  
 7 specifically designed to offer redress for any legal  
 8 adjudication that is the product of fraud.  
 9 The Republic of Ecuador has appeared before this  
 10 Tribunal during these last six years despite its Objection  
 11 to Jurisdiction in the hope that the Tribunal finally  
 12 reaches a decision that objectively applies the principles  
 13 under international and Ecuadorian law.  
 14 I now give the floor to Mr. Bloom, who will  
 15 continue with the Republic of Ecuador's argument, and I  
 16 thank you, Mr. President and Members of the Tribunal.  
 17 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Mr. Bloom.  
 18 MR. BLOOM: Thank you.  
 19 You may remember about five years ago, in May of  
 20 2010, when this Tribunal convened the initial procedural  
 21 meeting in this case, it combined that procedural meeting  
 22 with what turned out to be the first of many successive  
 23 interim-measures hearings. We had no idea back then what  
 24 we were in store for.  
 25 From the very beginning, Ecuador found itself in

02:38 1 the difficult position of constantly responding on each  
 2 occasion quite quickly to allegedly newfound evidence that  
 3 Claimants contended required on each occasion your  
 4 immediate attention or else they would face imminent and  
 5 dire consequences.

6 At the same time Claimants were in the midst of  
 7 amassing quite literally millions of documents, both  
 8 through their investigators and through their respective  
 9 1782 actions around the United States, about 35 or 40 in  
 10 all. We, at least, were on a carousel of sorts, a  
 11 carousel that was moving much too fast. As a practical, I  
 12 think as we all know, it is far easier and certainly  
 13 faster to make allegations than it is to consider and  
 14 settle upon a reasonable fact investigation, to conduct  
 15 that fact investigation with the resources available, and  
 16 given the time afforded. But notwithstanding Claimants'  
 17 repeated assertions that it would suffer dire consequences  
 18 if the Lago Agrio Judgment were to become enforceable, to  
 19 this day, it has paid not out a single dollar in any  
 20 enforcement action to the indigenous Plaintiffs, nor is  
 21 there even today a reasonable prospect that it will have  
 22 to do so in the imminent future.

23 But by driving the arbitral processes, as they  
 24 did, by articulating their narrative with a certainty that  
 25 was mirrored today, Claimants sought to prompt the

02:39 1 Tribunal to take measures based on this Tribunal's  
 2 understandable sense of justice perhaps just a bit more  
 3 than, say, on principles of international law. But the  
 4 facts are not as Claimants present, and they never were.

5 Weeks before this arbitration was filed, on  
 6 August 31, 2009, Chevron went public in an extraordinary  
 7 way to publicize their bombshell allegation that it had  
 8 videotaped evidence of a bribery scheme implicating the  
 9 then-Presiding Judge, Judge Núñez. You may recall that it  
 10 took time, a lot of time, time for us to subpoena  
 11 documents, subpoena witnesses, subpoena Mr. Borja for us  
 12 to establish that the two alleged good samaritans who  
 13 conducted the operation were, in fact, a Chevron  
 14 contractor named Diego Borja and a convicted drug felon by  
 15 the name of Wayne Hansen. We later learn that Borja  
 16 availed himself of Chevron's unique witness protection  
 17 program and received more than two million dollars in  
 18 benefits.

19 Things are not always as they seem. He himself  
 20 was quoted as saying there was no bribery, and a U.S.  
 21 Federal District Court Judge, then a Magistrate, likewise  
 22 found that the tapes he reviewed contained no evidence  
 23 that Judge Núñez was bribed. And I refer you to our  
 24 Track 2 Counter-Memorial at Appendix C.

25 So, too, Claimants once argued that the

02:41 1 indigenous Plaintiffs never even authorized the  
 2 environmental lawsuit, only to later drop that argument  
 3 when the Plaintiffs all reaffirmed that they, in fact, had  
 4 authorized that lawsuit and reaffirmed their commitment to  
 5 the case publicly.

6 And you may also recall Claimants repeatedly  
 7 declared that the Government of Ecuador, directly and  
 8 indirectly, inserted itself into the decision-making  
 9 processes of the Lago Agrio court, but now we learned from  
 10 their star witness, from Mr. Guerra in a recorded  
 11 conversation that he had with Chevron's investigators,  
 12 that the Government of Ecuador, in fact, never interfered.  
 13 In his words, "They never butted in. Never."

14 Now, we will spend the better part of the next  
 15 several weeks deconstructing the Claimants' case. Simply,  
 16 their allegations are not backed up by the very evidence  
 17 they cite oftentimes out of context, but we'll have that  
 18 opportunity.

19 The Claimants' claims fail in the first instance  
 20 as a matter of law. We on this side of the room represent  
 21 a sovereign, and if this system of BITs is to flourish and  
 22 I would submit even to survive, the law must be applied in  
 23 accordance with the intent of the Contracting Parties,  
 24 here the Republic of Ecuador and the United States;  
 25 otherwise, the credibility of the BIT system itself is

02:43 1 damaged because, frankly, we lose the buy-in, the  
 2 confidence of the respective States.

3 But while the law must be applied consistently,  
 4 Claimants time and again have asked this Tribunal to apply  
 5 legal principles differently in this case than every other  
 6 treaty case. Time and again, Claimants seek novel  
 7 exceptions to bedrock international legal principles.  
 8 They ask you to grant treaty rights to Chevron and assert  
 9 jurisdiction over Chevron's claims, even though Chevron  
 10 never invested even a single dollar in Ecuador. In so  
 11 arguing, Claimants are asking this Tribunal to go where no  
 12 Tribunal has before gone.

13 Claimants likewise ask this Tribunal to disregard  
 14 principles of exhaustion, for example, on the basis that  
 15 the Lago Agrio Judgment as currently enforceable,  
 16 notwithstanding that has never been an exception divined  
 17 by any Arbitral Tribunal and notwithstanding that they  
 18 alone had the power to stay the Judgment about which they  
 19 now complain. And when everything else fails, they argue  
 20 for futility, which is their catch-all, their catch-all  
 21 defense.

22 Five years ago, when I first appeared before you,  
 23 I noted that the indigenous Plaintiffs, Ecuadorean  
 24 citizens, had by then been seeking to have their day in  
 25 Court for the better part of 17 years. The clock

02:45 1 continues to run, and we are now at 22 years and counting.  
 2 According to media coverage of yesterday's RICO  
 3 proceeding, it sounds like that Court had some of the same  
 4 concerns: 22 years and counting. And whatever else might  
 5 be said about the underlying litigation, it is about  
 6 contamination. There is a tragedy that has unfolded and  
 7 that is still unfolding.  
 8       Precisely because of this proceeding, the  
 9 Attorney General's Office and outside counsel and our  
 10 experts have spent substantial time trudging along in the  
 11 rainforest, and you know what? The Lago Agrio Court got  
 12 it right, and we're going to show that in part during this  
 13 Hearing and in Ecuador. There is widespread  
 14 contamination.  
 15       And I think our experts will tell you that the  
 16 more they studied, the more they saw, the more they  
 17 reviewed Chevron's own data and all of the available data,  
 18 the more they recognized exactly how bad the situation is.  
 19 That's what the Lago Agrio Case is about.  
 20       And if you recall, we provided Witness Statements  
 21 from a couple of residents of the Oriente. Chevron did  
 22 not call them to testify. They do not want this case to  
 23 have anything to do with their plight. Claimants are,  
 24 instead, using this proceeding--and make no mistake about  
 25 it--as an insurance policy so that it will never be held

02:46 1 to account for the contamination for which they are truly  
 2 responsible. But if justice is to be served, this  
 3 Tribunal cannot ignore the contamination for which  
 4 Claimants are responsible. Today and over the next couple  
 5 of weeks, you will hear from new voices on this side, some  
 6 from Winston, some from our distinguished colleagues from  
 7 Dechert, and the office of the Attorney General.  
 8       Let me briefly just take you through what we  
 9 anticipate our presentation to be. Part one, we're going  
 10 to be dealing with the jurisdictional issues over  
 11 Chevron's claims. And it is a point to note that this was  
 12 an issue that took about 30 seconds of Claimants'  
 13 presentation. They hurried up through the law, we would  
 14 submit, because they want their rather tainted narrative  
 15 to drive the law in this case.  
 16       After we deal with the lack of jurisdiction over  
 17 Chevron, we're going to turn to the failure to exhaust  
 18 local remedies. At that point, we will ask for a break.  
 19 We have Part 3 which--I'm sorry, after Part 3, we will ask  
 20 for a break. Part three we're going to deal with the lack  
 21 of any viable treaty claims. Then we will ask for a  
 22 break. In the last session, we're going to deal with  
 23 specifically the factual predicates alleged by Chevron to  
 24 constitute their alleged denial of justice, and that's  
 25 going to have several parts.

02:48 1           This is in your slide packet, so you will be able  
 2 to follow along. I will note that we will also present a  
 3 response to Mr. Wade as it relates to Track 2, and I  
 4 suspect that we will begin with that in our second  
 5 session. On that Note, I'd like to turn the floor over to  
 6 my colleague, Mr. Silva Romero.  
 7       MR. SILVA ROMERO: Thank you, Mr. Bloom,  
 8 Mr. President, Members of the Tribunal. I shall now  
 9 address Ecuador's jurisdictional argument.  
 10       Put simply, Ecuador has been forced to defend  
 11 itself against a massive and very costly lawsuit before an  
 12 international investment--and I say "investment"  
 13 twice--Tribunal, despite the fact that the Tribunal, we  
 14 say, has no jurisdiction over TexPet's and Chevron's  
 15 claims.  
 16       As Mr. Bloom just said, Claimants didn't say a  
 17 single meaningful word on jurisdiction this morning  
 18 because they want you to forget what an investment  
 19 arbitration is made for. We shall see what they say  
 20 during their Closing Arguments at the end of these  
 21 hearings. And we will see if they make new arguments.  
 22       Because as you have noticed, Members of the  
 23 Tribunal, in a familiar pattern, every time Ecuador  
 24 responds to one of Chevron's arguments, including  
 25 jurisdictional arguments, another one shows up. In the

02:50 1 interest of time, however, I will address only Chevron's  
 2 own claims as direct investor, and I refer to Ecuador's  
 3 written submissions for all other jurisdictional  
 4 arguments.  
 5       My presentation today, Members of the Tribunal,  
 6 will establish that Chevron has never had any investment  
 7 or Investment Agreement in Ecuador with any relationship  
 8 to its denial-of-justice claim. With respect to Chevron's  
 9 denial-of-justice claim, the central facts are very clear:  
 10       First, Chevron has never contributed anything of  
 11 value to Ecuador's economy, much less participated in the  
 12 oil concession that was the source of the Lago Agrio  
 13 Litigation, as you can see, for instance, at  
 14 Paragraph 4.25 of the Tribunal's Third Interim Award on  
 15 jurisdiction.  
 16       Second, Ecuador's consent to investment  
 17 arbitration extends, as you know, only to claims arising  
 18 from investments of economic value and from investment  
 19 agreements.  
 20       From these very two simple propositions, it  
 21 follows, Members of the Tribunal, that you don't have  
 22 jurisdiction *ratione materiae* over Chevron's  
 23 denial-of-justice claims.  
 24       Now, before addressing Ecuador's objections to  
 25 jurisdiction in relation to Chevron, I will briefly refer

02:52 1 to the Tribunal's Third Interim Award on jurisdiction. In  
 2 that award, the Tribunal made a narrow finding in  
 3 Chevron's favor. It decided that TexPet itself is an  
 4 indirect investment of Chevron's covered by the Treaty,  
 5 which means that Chevron can bring indirect claims with  
 6 respect to Ecuador's treatment of TexPet. This narrow  
 7 finding, however, has, we submit, no consequences for  
 8 Chevron's denial-of-justice claim. The Award explicitly  
 9 excluded the Lago Agrio Litigation and related claims from  
 10 the scope of its conclusion about jurisdiction.

11 As you can see on the screen, "The Tribunal  
 12 reserved for the future any Final Decision in regard to  
 13 the Respondent's jurisdictional objection to Chevron's own  
 14 claims as a direct investor." This is Paragraph 4.27.

15 Similarly, although the Tribunal later found that  
 16 Chevron was a Releasee under Ecuadorian law, it didn't  
 17 decide whether Chevron had a covered Investment Agreement  
 18 that could support jurisdiction for its Lago Agrio claims  
 19 and related claims under the Treaty. In short, the  
 20 Tribunal decided to postpone until now all of the most  
 21 important questions regarding jurisdiction in this case.

22 For these questions, contrary to what Claimants  
 23 alleged in their last written submissions, the prima facie  
 24 standard that Chevron enjoyed during the jurisdictional  
 25 phase of the arbitration does not apply anymore. As this

02:54 1 Tribunal announced in its Third Interim Award on  
 2 jurisdiction, Chevron now bears the full burden of proving  
 3 its claim of jurisdiction, and faces, we submit, an  
 4 insurmountable task.

5 Turning now to Ecuador's Objection to  
 6 Jurisdiction, I will advance two very simple propositions.  
 7 I will begin my presentation by explaining why Chevron has  
 8 no investment agreement that could possibly generate  
 9 jurisdiction in the circumstances. I will then make clear  
 10 why Chevron has no investment relevant to the Lago Agrio  
 11 Litigation and to its related denial-of-justice claim.

12 Turning to my first proposition, Chevron has no  
 13 investment agreement. To begin, Chevron contends that the  
 14 Settlement Agreement is an investment agreement conferring  
 15 the Tribunal with jurisdiction over its denial-of-justice  
 16 claim. We say that it is not for two different reasons:

17 First, for there to be jurisdiction under Article  
 18 VI of the Treaty, Chevron not only must be entitled to  
 19 certain contractual rights under the Settlement Agreement,  
 20 but also the Settlement Agreement must be an Investment  
 21 Agreement. Contrary to what Claimants imply, this  
 22 question wasn't settled by the finding that Chevron was a  
 23 Releasee. As the Tribunal indicated in its recent  
 24 decision on Track 1B, "the Respondent strongly denies all  
 25 claims for denial of justice on the merits and also

02:56 1 disputes the Tribunal's jurisdiction to decide any such  
 2 claims in this arbitration. Those parts of the Parties'  
 3 dispute cannot be decided, even indirectly, by the  
 4 Tribunal in this Track 1B".

5 Even if the Tribunal found that Chevron was a  
 6 Releasee, the Tribunal also found that the 1995 Settlement  
 7 Agreement, by itself, was not an investment agreement. It  
 8 found specifically that it is only when that 1995  
 9 Settlement is considered along with the 1973 Concession  
 10 Agreement that it forms part of an investment agreement.  
 11 This is Paragraph 4.36 of the Third Interim Award on  
 12 jurisdiction.

13 The Tribunal also found that Chevron was not a  
 14 party to any Concession Agreement. This is Paragraph 4.38  
 15 of the Third Interim Award on jurisdiction.

16 As a consequence, Chevron has failed to establish  
 17 that it is a party to any Investment Agreement.

18 Second point, and ex abundante cautela, Chevron's  
 19 argument rests on the premise that the Lago Agrio  
 20 Litigation concerned only the limited diffuse claims  
 21 released by the 1995 Settlement Agreement. Chevron has no  
 22 choice but to make this assumption because the Tribunal  
 23 decided in its First Partial Award on Track 1 that the  
 24 Release is limited to the right to be free from such  
 25 diffuse claims. This is Paragraph 112 of that award.

02:58 1 However, the recent Track 1B Decision has proven  
 2 Chevron wrong on this very issue. The Tribunal decided  
 3 that, and I quote here, Paragraph 183 of the Decision:  
 4 "The Lago Agrio complaint, as originally filed, does  
 5 include individual claims and cannot be read (as the  
 6 Claimants assert and the Respondent denies) as leading  
 7 'exclusively' or 'only diffuse claims.'" As the Tribunal  
 8 will determine, the Lago Agrio claims have nothing to do  
 9 with Chevron's right to be free from those limited diffuse  
 10 claims defined under Article 19.2 of the 1998 Ecuadorian  
 11 Constitution that were released. Therefore, Chevron  
 12 presents no dispute arising out of, or relating to, the  
 13 1995 Settlement Agreement as required under Article  
 14 VI(1)(a) of the Treaty.

15 Aside from having no investment agreement, and I  
 16 come here to my second proposition, Chevron has no  
 17 relevant investment in the circumstances. According to  
 18 the Claimants--and this first quote is quite  
 19 remarkable--its investment here is, and I quote, "The 1973  
 20 Concession Agreement, the amounts invested and the oil  
 21 operations and activities in Ecuador, all agreements with  
 22 Ecuador and Petroecuador, including the Settlement  
 23 Agreements, and the rights and interests associated with  
 24 the Lago Agrio Litigation, including both substantive and  
 25 procedural rights."



03:00 1 Members of the Tribunal, that is not a  
 2 description of an investment. It is a list of vaguely  
 3 related items designed only to confuse. In fact, this  
 4 very list that you can read on the screen does not even  
 5 distinguish between the two Claimants TexPet and Chevron.  
 6 When Chevron goes on to connect its  
 7 denial-of-justice claim to the BIT's standards, it becomes  
 8 patently clear that even the Claimants know that the  
 9 Tribunal has no jurisdiction, and you can see this from  
 10 the second quotation on the slide.  
 11 A more rigorous analysis is required to cut, as  
 12 the Tribunal put it, this Gordian knot. I will explain  
 13 first why Chevron has no relevant investment of its own  
 14 for the purpose of granting the Tribunal jurisdiction on  
 15 its own denial-of-justice claim; second, why Chevron's  
 16 investment in TexPet is of no help; third, why Chevron's  
 17 other attempts to manufacture an investment are similarly  
 18 untenable; and, lastly, why the so-called "amalgamation"  
 19 of Chevron and Texaco is of no help to Chevron's  
 20 ill-founded claims.  
 21 First, Chevron, Members of the Tribunal, did not  
 22 contribute directly, indirectly, or otherwise to the oil  
 23 production and economic activity that took place under the  
 24 1973 Concession Agreement. The facts speak plainly. As  
 25 the Tribunal acknowledged, Chevron acquired its interests

03:01 1 in TexPet in 2001, while TexPet's Concession ended in  
 2 1992, years earlier. Chevron was not the indirect owner  
 3 of TexPet at the time of any economic activity in Lago  
 4 Agrio. Its indirect investment in TexPet is not a direct  
 5 investment in the oil concession.  
 6 Chevron did not contribute resources in the  
 7 Ecuadorian territory that benefited the local economy as  
 8 the Tribunal, for instance, in GEA Group and Occidental I  
 9 have required. How could Chevron be an investor? It  
 10 simply was not on the scene at the times when it would  
 11 have been possible to make an economic contribution.  
 12 Second point, Chevron argues that it has a  
 13 covered indirect investment in TexPet, a fact that the  
 14 Tribunal recognized, as I said, in the Third Interim Award  
 15 on jurisdiction. However, Chevron goes on to claim that  
 16 these indirect investment suffices for jurisdiction over  
 17 its denial-of-justice claim because it says it has a right  
 18 to limited liability protected by the investment treaty.  
 19 This is simply incorrect. As you can see on the screen,  
 20 the Tribunal found that its decision that TexPet was a  
 21 covered indirect investment did not resolve the question  
 22 of whether it had jurisdiction over Chevron's claims  
 23 regarding the Lago Agrio Litigation. And we say that it  
 24 has no jurisdiction--the Tribunal has no jurisdiction--for  
 25 the following two reasons:

03:03 1 First reason, a right to limited liability under  
 2 U.S. law--or under Ecuadorian law, for that matter--is not  
 3 an investment treaty right regarding an investment in  
 4 Ecuador. This argument confuses national and  
 5 international law. It might be true that U.S. law and  
 6 Ecuadorian law establish rights to limited liability, but  
 7 investment treaties establish their own set of rights, and  
 8 only breaches of those treaty rights grant jurisdiction.  
 9 There is no clause in the U.S.-Ecuador BIT that  
 10 establishes or guarantees a right to limited liability in  
 11 an investment. Limited liability is not a right conferred  
 12 or created by this Treaty as required under Article  
 13 VI(1)(c) of the Treaty.  
 14 Second reason, the Lago Agrio Litigation could  
 15 not have affected Chevron's rights with respect to TexPet  
 16 because it bore no consequences for TexPet. TexPet was  
 17 not a party to that very litigation. The litigation  
 18 affected only Chevron. It could not have affected any  
 19 right with respect to the investment conferred or created  
 20 by the Treaty or by any other source of legal rights for  
 21 that matter as required by Article VI(1)(c) of the Treaty.  
 22 I come to my third point: Chevron also claims  
 23 that it was entitled to all procedural rights and  
 24 substantive legal defenses of TexPet which they say formed  
 25 part of Chevron's protected investment under the BIT. It

03:05 1 simply attempts to cobble together an investment from such  
 2 rights, as well as its rights as a Releasee and its right  
 3 to limited liability, and to pass them off as an adequate  
 4 basis for jurisdiction. However, this argument  
 5 misunderstands the nature of the covered direct  
 6 investment. Investment tribunals like Occidental I and  
 7 GEA Group have consistently found that without any  
 8 contribution to or relevant economic activity within the  
 9 host State's territory, there is no covered investment,  
 10 and not just any commitment of resources in the territory  
 11 of the host State will make it.  
 12 As opposing counsel has recognized, that  
 13 commitment must typically contribute to the development of  
 14 the State.  
 15 For all of these reasons, a legal right is not by  
 16 itself an investment. Again, those sorts of legal rights  
 17 simply do not involve any economic contribution or any  
 18 economic activity at all. It made simply no sense to say  
 19 that they are "investments."  
 20 Fourth and last point, contrary to what Claimants  
 21 allege, the so-called "amalgamation" of Chevron and Texaco  
 22 does not extend the Tribunal's jurisdiction. Compulsory  
 23 jurisdiction or jurisdiction out of fairness  
 24 considerations is foreign to international law and  
 25 arbitral practice. A tribunal has jurisdiction over a

03:07 1 claim only in virtue of a State consent. The purported  
 2 amalgamation does not change the scope of Ecuador's  
 3 consent to investment arbitration for three reasons:  
 4 First reason, investor status matters.  
 5 International investment arbitration protects only  
 6 investors regarding their investments, not just any  
 7 foreign national regarding any complaint. As explained,  
 8 Ecuador extends that privilege only to the investors who  
 9 have contributed to its economy. This fundamental fact  
 10 doesn't change when foreign nationals allege that they  
 11 have suffered a denial of justice.  
 12 Second, privity also matters. As is typical of  
 13 investment treaties, the U.S.-Ecuador BIT grants  
 14 jurisdiction only to those Parties that have their own  
 15 investment or Investment Agreement. It does not provide  
 16 for a transfer of jurisdiction separately from a covered  
 17 investment or Investment Agreement absent language in the  
 18 Treaty to the contrary.  
 19 And, third, and above all, legal systems matter.  
 20 There is an important legal difference between liability  
 21 under municipal law and jurisdiction under international  
 22 law. The so-called "amalgamation" of Chevron and Texaco  
 23 or TexPet under Ecuadorian law for liability determination  
 24 does not imply that amalgamation under international law  
 25 is proper when this Tribunal determines jurisdiction. The

03:09 1 liability analysis determines whether corporate  
 2 formalities or corporate separateness are observed at the  
 3 time of Judgment, while the jurisdictional analysis  
 4 determines whether the Claimant established an investment.  
 5 Although my colleague, Mr. Leonard, will explain  
 6 further the details, it is sufficient for the time being  
 7 to stress that Chevron depleted Texaco and TexPet of  
 8 resources in an attempt to escape liability in the Lago  
 9 Agrio Litigation. It now asserts those same actions  
 10 against the nemo auditur principle as the basis for  
 11 jurisdiction in the current arbitration. However, what  
 12 matters for jurisdiction is the relationship of Chevron to  
 13 Texaco and TexPet while the oil concession, the only  
 14 possible investment was ongoing, not the relationship at  
 15 the time of the Lago Agrio Judgment.  
 16 So, investor status matters, privity matters, and  
 17 legal systems matter. All three explain why this Tribunal  
 18 cannot amalgamate Chevron with Texaco or TexPet when  
 19 determining whether it has jurisdiction.  
 20 Let me summarize our main conclusions on this  
 21 jurisdictional point:  
 22 First, as this Tribunal all but explicitly  
 23 decided, Chevron's claims are unrelated to a covered  
 24 investment agreement. The Tribunal already decided that  
 25 Chevron was not a party to any concession agreement and

03:11 1 that, without a concession agreement, the 1995 Settlement  
 2 Agreement was not an investment agreement.  
 3 Second, Chevron cannot be considered a direct  
 4 investor. The oil Concession ended in 1992 while Chevron  
 5 acquired TexPet in 2001.  
 6 Third, Chevron's claims regarding the Lago Agrio  
 7 Litigation are not related to its indirect investment in  
 8 TexPet itself for jurisdiction to exist on that basis.  
 9 The Claims do not concern alleged breaches of rights with  
 10 respect to TexPet because TexPet was not involved in and  
 11 was not affected by that litigation.  
 12 And, fourth, and last, the municipal Court's  
 13 so-called "amalgamation" of Chevron with Texaco or TexPet  
 14 is irrelevant to jurisdiction because jurisdiction for  
 15 international arbitration depends only on State consent.  
 16 The scope of a State consent to jurisdiction does not  
 17 change based on a municipal Court's legal analysis on  
 18 liability.  
 19 In sum, Ecuador has already defended this  
 20 arbitration, Members of the Tribunal, at great length and  
 21 great expense, despite the Tribunal's lack of  
 22 jurisdiction. It is now time to recognize that Ecuador  
 23 has simply not consented to this investment arbitration.  
 24 With that, Members of the Tribunal, I conclude my  
 25 submission, and with your permission, I hand over the

03:12 1 floor to Dra. Blanca Gómez de la Torre.  
 2 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you very much.  
 3 Just before you disappeared, on you Slide 12 you  
 4 have a reference to the GEA Group Case. I didn't catch  
 5 the exhibit number. If you had it easily available, it  
 6 would be useful to write it in. If not, we can come back  
 7 to it.  
 8 MS. SILVER: RLA-648, Mr. President.  
 9 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Good. Thank you very much.  
 10 Please.  
 11 MS. GÓMEZ de la TORRE: Thank you, Mr. President,  
 12 Members of the Tribunal.  
 13 I will devote the next 14 minutes to the issue of  
 14 exhaustion of local remedies and Claimants' failure to  
 15 comply with this rule. I will address some aspects of the  
 16 Republic's case as they touch upon matters of Ecuadorian  
 17 law and will then turn the floor to my esteemed colleagues  
 18 to address the subject upon an international law  
 19 perspective.  
 20 There really is no dispute that exhaustion of  
 21 local remedies is a substantive element of a Claim for  
 22 Denial of Justice. No claims based on denial of justice  
 23 can be brought without prior exhaustion of local remedies.  
 24 In the words of Claimants' own counsel, "there can be no  
 25 denial before exhaustion." To put it more precisely, the

03:14 1 offending State must be given a reasonable opportunity to  
 2 correct actions which otherwise would ripen into delicts.  
 3 There is also no dispute that it is for the  
 4 Respondent merely to prove that the particular procedural  
 5 remedy was available than it is for the Plaintiff to  
 6 adduce the evidence and prove that the particular  
 7 procedural remedy was ineffective.  
 8 The Republic has satisfied its burden of showing  
 9 that the Ecuadorian legal system provides Chevron with  
 10 remedies specifically intended to redress exactly the  
 11 claims which Claimants have brought before this Tribunal.  
 12 I will address this premise and will let Professor Mayer  
 13 speak about Claimants' inability to show that those  
 14 remedies are ineffective.  
 15 Specifically, Claimants asserted two basis for  
 16 their denial-of-justice claim: First, arguments regarding  
 17 an alleged legal error in the Lago Agrio Judgment; and,  
 18 second, their unsupported claim on judicial fraud.  
 19 On my first point, there are two reasons why  
 20 Claimants' claims failed: Claimants have yet to exhaust  
 21 remedies available to Chevron in Ecuador. Even if  
 22 Claimants were somehow relieved from the strictures of  
 23 exhaustion-of-remedies rule, their claims are held to a  
 24 high evidentiary standard, which Claimants cannot meet.  
 25 I will let Mr. Leonard address the Tribunal on

03:16 1 the frivolous nature of Claimants' allegations of legal  
 2 and procedural error. I will simply state here that  
 3 Claimants' claims predicated upon alleged legal error in  
 4 the Lago Agrio proceedings are premature and not ripe for  
 5 adjudication by this Tribunal.  
 6 Chevron filed an extraordinary action for  
 7 protection with the Constitutional Court on  
 8 December 23, 2013. Chevron presented the Constitutional  
 9 Court with substantially the same issues Claimants raised  
 10 in this arbitral proceeding. There is no dispute that the  
 11 Constitutional Court offers an effective remedy for  
 12 Chevron's claims relating to the legal basis for the Lago  
 13 Agrio Judgment. In fact, should the Constitutional Court  
 14 find that the Lago Agrio Court, the Appellate Court or the  
 15 National Court violated Chevron's constitutional right, it  
 16 has the power to invalidate the underlying decision and  
 17 remand the case to the corresponding Court to continue  
 18 from the point where the violation occurred until a  
 19 decision is reached. Chevron's pending constitutional  
 20 action itself is evidence that Claimants have yet to  
 21 exhaust available domestic remedies in respect of their  
 22 claims of legal and procedural error. Such failure is  
 23 fatal to Claimants' claims here. There is no reason or  
 24 basis to exempt Claimants from the rule of exhaustion.  
 25 I now turn to my second point: Chevron's

03:17 1 argument on judicial fraud, which is the Claimants'  
 2 principal basis for their denial-of-justice claim,  
 3 specifically the alleged ghostwriting of the Judgment.  
 4 The National Court dismissed Chevron's claims of  
 5 procedural fraud noting correctly that, first, the  
 6 Appellate Court do not have original jurisdiction over  
 7 such claims, but Chevron nonetheless has a clear remedy  
 8 under the Collusion Prosecution Act, which I will refer to  
 9 as CPA.  
 10 Chevron may file a CPA action until  
 11 February 14, 2016, when the limitations period will run.  
 12 But Chevron has thus far chosen to ignore this remedy.  
 13 There is no dispute about that. Also beyond dispute is  
 14 the fact that under the CPA quoted by the National Court,  
 15 an action may be brought by an aggrieved party alleging  
 16 that a proceeding has been tainted by fraud. And should  
 17 the aggrieved party succeed in proving its claims, the  
 18 judge shall issue all necessary measures to void or  
 19 invalidate the collusive proceeding and to restore the  
 20 things prior to the collusion and obtain a judgment for  
 21 damages.  
 22 Claimants' attorneys know this all too well. One  
 23 of Chevron's lead counsel, while serving as a Supreme  
 24 Court Justice, confirmed that an action under the CPA is  
 25 an effective remedy to address allegations of corruption

03:19 1 or collusion in legal proceedings. In Claimants' letter  
 2 to the Tribunal on December 2, 2013, they declare: If  
 3 this Tribunal concludes that Claimants fail to exhaust  
 4 local remedies, then it can rule accordingly. And that is  
 5 precisely what I ask this Tribunal to do.  
 6 These are the very remedies that Claimants have  
 7 sought from this Tribunal in their request for  
 8 nullification of the Lago Agrio Judgment. There is no  
 9 dispute that CPA action is an available local remedy that  
 10 would permit Claimants to address and, if supported by  
 11 persuasive evidence, obtain effective redress for  
 12 Chevron's claims of fraud and ghostwriting of the Lago  
 13 Agrio Judgment.  
 14 Now Claimants cannot afford to concede this point  
 15 and have tried their level best to evade the  
 16 exhaustion-of-remedies rule. Claimants first argue that  
 17 the exhaustion-of-remedies rule does not apply to Chevron.  
 18 Alternatively, Claimants contend that even if the rule  
 19 applied to Chevron, the CPA is not available to it.  
 20 Third and finally, Claimants speculate that, even  
 21 if the CPA were an available remedy, it would have proved  
 22 or would prove inviolate now or any time before the  
 23 statute of limitations run ineffective or futile.  
 24 Each of Claimants' arguments fails either as a  
 25 matter of international law or as a matter of Ecuadorian

03:21 1 law. I will briefly refer to Claimants' contention that  
 2 the CPA is not available to Chevron.  
 3 First, the CPA is available to any person who has  
 4 suffered harm in any way by an act of collusion including  
 5 the deprivation of property rights or of other rights that  
 6 are legally due to such person.  
 7 Chevron's own Expert, Dr. Coronel, expressly  
 8 disclaims Claimants' theory that the CPA action is only  
 9 available for real estate transactions. In a somewhat  
 10 hidden footnote in his Expert Report of May 7, 2014, in  
 11 Dr. Coronel's own words: "The text of law currently in  
 12 force leaves open the possibility for the action for  
 13 collusion to be filed as well when other types of rights  
 14 are affected." Claimants' contention that the CPA is only  
 15 available for real estate transactions finds no basis in  
 16 the statute or Ecuadorian legal practice and must be  
 17 dismissed. If nothing else, Claimants' own Expert  
 18 testimony should put this matter to rest. In fact, after  
 19 they appeared to be in agreement, as they have dropped  
 20 this frivolous argument.  
 21 Second, CPA Article 5 makes clear that, pending  
 22 appeals do not bar litigants from also filing a CPA  
 23 action. It expressly establishes that the judge shall  
 24 request the record of the proceeding where the collusion  
 25 allegedly played a role, as well as that of the associated

03:23 1 proceedings, if any. And if the requested proceedings are  
 2 ongoing, for example, on appeal, the judge hearing the CPA  
 3 action shall order copies of the record in the underlying  
 4 case.  
 5 There is no merit to Claimants' contention  
 6 otherwise. At least for the following reasons.  
 7 Neither the Appellate Court nor the National  
 8 Court afforded Chevron a forum to obtain judicial review  
 9 of Chevron's purported evidence of fraud and corruption  
 10 since they had no competence to rule upon those materials.  
 11 The reason is a simple one: Chevron's allegations  
 12 necessitate the production of evidence outside the trial  
 13 court record. But the applicable rules of procedure do  
 14 not allow for the production of any evidence at the  
 15 appellate or cassation levels. Applicable Rules of  
 16 Procedure are crystal clear. Article 838 of the Code of  
 17 Civil Procedures precludes the submission of any evidence  
 18 at the appellate level in oral summary proceedings. For  
 19 the record, RLA-198.  
 20 And Article 15 of the Law of Cassation excludes  
 21 the possibility of submitting new evidence on cassation.  
 22 RLA-558. Claimants' Expert, Dr. Coronel, attempts a way  
 23 around this legal provisions by suggesting that a  
 24 distinction needs to be made between (a) evidence  
 25 pertaining to the merits of the dispute; and (b) evidence

03:25 1 of fraud in the procurement of the Judgment. Dr. Coronel  
 2 suggests that, while the former is precluded by procedural  
 3 rules, there is no impediment for the production of the  
 4 latter, and thus Chevron's evidence of fraud should have  
 5 been admitted and ruled upon by the Court of Appeals.  
 6 But Ecuadorian law makes no such distinction. It  
 7 thus comes as no surprise that Dr. Coronel offers not one  
 8 authority or judicial precedent in support of his  
 9 fabricated theory. Nor does applicable procedure allow  
 10 for the introduction of new evidence at the Constitutional  
 11 Court level. The Court has explained as much in multiple  
 12 occasions and in ambiguous terms, the alleged violation of  
 13 a constitutional right must instead be clear, direct,  
 14 manifest, obvious, and evident from the trial court  
 15 record. For example, these cases can be found in the  
 16 Respondent's submission and Legal Expert Report. Here is  
 17 one of them.  
 18 The Constitutional Court may examine only the  
 19 records of the proceedings before the trial court. The  
 20 Court of Appeals and the National Court. Again,  
 21 Dr. Coronel purports to know better and offers another  
 22 fabricated excuse in aid of Claimants' position.  
 23 Specifically, Dr. Coronel asserts that the prohibition  
 24 against submission of new evidence before the  
 25 Constitutional Court was lifted with the enactment of the

03:27 1 Statute known as the Organic Law on Judicial Guarantees  
 2 and Constitutional Oversight in 2009. From that point on,  
 3 he submits, new evidence is allowed, and the Court's  
 4 judicial determinations to the contrary are no longer  
 5 relevant.  
 6 In support, Dr. Coronel points to some provisions  
 7 of general application to all proceedings before the  
 8 Constitutional Court. I will not address here those  
 9 provisions because Dr. Andrade's Second Supplemental  
 10 Foreign Law Report at Paragraphs 43, 44, and 45 puts the  
 11 matter to rest.  
 12 In his response, Dr. Andrade explains that, in  
 13 addition to laying out rules of general application for  
 14 all proceedings before the Constitutional Court, the  
 15 Organic Law of Jurisdictional Guarantees and  
 16 Constitutional Control, for the record RLA-459, contains  
 17 rules of a special application to the extraordinary action  
 18 of protection. And under Ecuadorian law, rules of a  
 19 special application prevail over those of general  
 20 application.  
 21 And as expressly stated by the Constitutional  
 22 Court on multiple occasions, after the enactment of this  
 23 Statute, the rules of procedure specifically applicable to  
 24 extraordinary actions of protection do not permit the  
 25 production of new evidence.

03:28 1 By conflating rules applicable to different  
2 proceedings, Dr. Coronel creates another one of his legal  
3 fictions, underscoring once again the misleading nature of  
4 his testimony.  
5 Mr. President, Members of the Tribunal, under  
6 Ecuadorian Law, filing and pursuing a complaint under the  
7 CPA is the only correct procedure for Chevron to air its  
8 allegations of fraud and corruption. Claimants'  
9 contentions otherwise have no basis in Ecuadorian law, and  
10 Chevron has chosen not to pursue this remedy, although it  
11 is still available. Which, as a matter of international  
12 law bars their fraud and corruption claims in this forum  
13 and is, thus, fatal to their denial-of-justice claim.  
14 Mr. President, this concludes my presentation;  
15 and, with that, I'm now turning the floor to Professor  
16 Mayer. Thank you.  
17 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you.  
18 Professor Mayer.  
19 PROFESSOR MAYER: Mr. President, Members of the  
20 Tribunal, in addition to its objections as to the  
21 availability of the recourses under Ecuadorian law, which  
22 Dra. Gómez de la Torre has just refuted, Chevron raises two  
23 objections as to the conformity of these recourses,  
24 particularly the CPA action with the requirements of  
25 international law.

03:30 1 The first of these objections is purely formal  
2 and will not call for a long rebuttal.  
3 According to Chevron, the CPA action would not  
4 constitute a suitable recourse with regard to the  
5 requirement of exhaustion of local remedies because it is  
6 not a vertical recourse such as an ordinary appeal or a  
7 cassation appeal. However, Chevron does not mention any  
8 authority for this proposition.  
9 What international law demands is that the  
10 recourse otherwise available constitutes an effective  
11 remedy, and if that requirement is satisfied, why should  
12 there be an additional and purely formalistic requirement?  
13 Either the CPA action can provide an effective remedy or  
14 it cannot.  
15 And as I will show under international law and as  
16 Dra. Gómez de la Torre has shown under Ecuadorian law, a  
17 CPA action could have been effective or could still be  
18 effective. And that suffices: the recourse that should  
19 have been tried.  
20 The second objection, on which I will spend the  
21 rest of the time allocated to me, around 30 minutes, is  
22 that the recourse which Chevron has chosen not to use is  
23 futile. It is indisputable that no satisfaction--if no  
24 satisfaction can be obtained through the exercise of a  
25 given recourse, it would be absurd to require that it be

03:32 1 exercised, and international law is perfectly clear in  
2 that respect. But why should a CPA action be futile in  
3 this case? Chevron invokes two distinct arguments:  
4 First, there would be no reasonable hope that the  
5 Court seized of the CPA action would have decided in favor  
6 of Chevron.  
7 And, second, the fact that the Judgment rendered  
8 by the Ecuadorian Court is enforceable, would render even  
9 a favorable outcome of the CPA action ineffective.  
10 Before addressing these two arguments, I would  
11 recall Ecuador's position as to how the futility argument  
12 should work in international law, in the light of  
13 precedents and doctrinal opinions.  
14 There are two distinct issues: the burden of  
15 proof and the standard of proof.  
16 First, the burden of proof. Contrary to what  
17 Chevron contends, authors are unanimous in saying that it  
18 is for the self-styled victim of the denial of justice to  
19 prove that using a certain available recourse would have  
20 been futile.  
21 The Special Rapporteur on Diplomatic Protection  
22 in the International Law Commission, Professor Dugard,  
23 explains the following in his Third Report. "The  
24 Respondent State will be required to prove that local  
25 remedies are available, while the burden of proof will be

03:34 1 on the Claimant State to show that such remedies are  
2 ineffective or futile." He refers here to the Claimant  
3 State because he has--he envisages the Diplomatic  
4 Protection, but, of course, that applies to any Claimant  
5 victim and in particular an investor.  
6 Professor Paulsson has quoted the very same  
7 passage of Professor Dugard's Report that I just read,  
8 obviously approvingly. After the quotation, he mentioned:  
9 "The relevance in terms of denial of justice is direct and  
10 evident, and what goes for the Claimant State in espousal  
11 cases also goes for any other Claimant."  
12 However, Chevron, or Claimants in their Track 2  
13 Reply Memorial relied for the opposite view on the Opinion  
14 of Sir Fawcett. That's what they say: "It is Ecuador,  
15 not Claimants, that bears the burden of proving that its  
16 so-called "remedies" are available and effective, and  
17 would, in fact, offer any real relief." And in the  
18 footnote, they refer to J.E.S. Fawcett, The exhaustion of  
19 Local remedies: substance or procedure.  
20 But, in fact, if one goes to the very article by  
21 Sir Fawcett, what he says is: "The burden of proof rests  
22 upon the Respondent State to show that local remedies were  
23 available"--that's the reference that was made in the  
24 Claimants' Memorial--but then it continues: "If it  
25 discharges his burden, the burden of proof falls on the

03:36 1 Claimant State (here investor) to show that the local  
 2 remedies indicated were not in the circumstances of the  
 3 case effective." Therefore, all authorities agree the  
 4 burden of proof of effectiveness rests on the Claimant.  
 5 Now, what about the standard of proof? Here  
 6 there is no unanimity. There are various views on this  
 7 issue. According to some decisions and some authors, the  
 8 self-styled victim should make the futility obvious. The  
 9 criterion is obvious futility.  
 10 For instance, in the Finnish Shipowners  
 11 arbitration, the arbitrator said or comes to the  
 12 conclusion that "the appealable points of law obviously  
 13 would have been insufficient to reverse the decision of  
 14 the Arbitration Board," and commenting upon that case,  
 15 Professor Amerasinghe said: "The Finnish Ships  
 16 arbitration made it clear that the test is obvious  
 17 futility of manifest ineffectiveness."  
 18 In the Ambatielos Case, it was held that it is  
 19 essential that such remedies, if they had been resorted  
 20 to, would have proved to be obviously futile.  
 21 Professor Amerasinghe not only opted for a  
 22 certain standard, but explains why that standard is the  
 23 right one and must be extremely high, and he ties that to  
 24 the idea of sovereignty: "The sovereignty of the host or  
 25 Respondent State requires that it be given a fair

03:38 1 opportunity of doing justice through its own system, and  
 2 there seems in the past to have been a general tendency to  
 3 recognize only those limitations which are really  
 4 necessary."  
 5 Now, it is true that there are other views and  
 6 then some decisions and authors adopted a different  
 7 standard. A remedy would not need to be pursued in the  
 8 absence of a reasonable possibility of effective redress.  
 9 Although gallons of ink have been spent in favor of one or  
 10 the other standard, practically the difference seems to be  
 11 minimal, and I focus here on the second standard, the one  
 12 on which the Claimants rely:  
 13 First, no reasonable possibility of effective  
 14 redress is not equivalent to the existence of a reasonable  
 15 doubt as to the effectiveness of a remedy. A reasonable  
 16 doubt does not suffice, and there is unanimity on that  
 17 point.  
 18 Second, when can it be said that there is no  
 19 reasonable possibility of effective redress? It is, in  
 20 fact, a very high standard. If the word "reasonable" had  
 21 not been used, simply no possibility, that would have  
 22 meant that there would be not the slightest chance for the  
 23 Claimant to obtain redress. The action would be doomed to  
 24 failure.  
 25 Now, there is the word "reasonable," and that

03:40 1 word introduces the idea that there might be a tiny chance  
 2 of success, but so tiny that it would not be reasonable to  
 3 even try.  
 4 I say "tiny," not "small." If there is a small  
 5 chance of success of redress, it is reasonable to try it  
 6 when you have been sentenced to pay billions of dollars if  
 7 you have a small chance to win in a new recourse, you  
 8 certainly must not miss it. And not only do you owe it to  
 9 yourself, but you owe it to the State because, accusing  
 10 the State of denial of justice without having tried  
 11 anything would be unfair. It would be unfair to the State  
 12 for the Claimant to say: "Your judicial system must be  
 13 declared guilty of denial of justice, although I did not  
 14 try a certain recourse. I didn't because I found my  
 15 chances of effective redress to be small, and I had good  
 16 reasons to find them small. I might have obtained  
 17 redress. It was not impossible, but it's so much more  
 18 simple not to try and to consider that denial of justice  
 19 is already established," and that is unfair to the State.  
 20 I will now show that Chevron does not establish  
 21 that--supposing, of course, there has been collusion--its  
 22 chances of winning a CPA action would have been tiny;  
 23 therefore, whether the standard is obvious futility or no  
 24 reasonable possibility of effective redress, Chevron  
 25 should have introduced a CPA action.

03:42 1 I come now to the Claimant's first futility  
 2 argument. According to them, the available remedies are  
 3 futile because there would be no hope of success before  
 4 the Ecuadorian courts.  
 5 Chevron's argument here is that the whole system  
 6 of justice, every court, every judge in Ecuador is partial  
 7 or corrupt and in addition, that an investor's action is  
 8 doomed to fail because there are pressures by and even  
 9 threats by the Government. Although the burden of proof  
 10 does not rest on Ecuador, Ecuador has shown in these  
 11 proceedings that this description of its judicial system  
 12 is contradicted first by the assessment of that system by  
 13 independent organizations and, second, by actual decisions  
 14 rendered in favor of Texaco or Chevron.  
 15 During the past eight years, Ecuador had made an  
 16 impressive series of reforms, including, among others, the  
 17 ratification of a new Constitution which recognizes the  
 18 separation of powers doctrine and judicial independence,  
 19 the establishment of a Constitutional Court, the reform of  
 20 the Organic Code of the Judiciary, the introduction of a  
 21 merit-based selection process for appointing all judges.  
 22 And these reforms have been praised by, inter alia, the  
 23 General Secretary of the United States, the Special  
 24 Rapporteur of the United Nations on the Independence of  
 25 Judges and Lawyers, the Carter Center and the European

03:44 1 Union.  
 2 Well, of course, what is important is how the  
 3 system works in practice, but for that, also, we have  
 4 available an objective assessment. USAID, the United  
 5 States Agency for International Development, has made a  
 6 study in 2014 which concludes, in terms of trust in  
 7 justice system, that among 25 countries of North America,  
 8 Central and South America, Canada is first, Ecuador is  
 9 sixth, and the United States only eighth. Then indicting  
 10 Ecuador's judicial system would be tantamount to indicting  
 11 the judicial systems of almost all the States in the  
 12 Americas, including the United States.  
 13 Also, even Claimants' Experts have praised the  
 14 impartiality of Ecuadorian courts in cases involving  
 15 foreigners. Dr. Alejandro Ponce Martínez in his  
 16 supplemental Affidavit in 2000 wrote: "Multinational and  
 17 oil companies are generally treated by the Ecuadorian  
 18 Court in equal conditions to national companies or  
 19 individuals."  
 20 Dr. Jose Perez-Arteta wrote: "Ecuador's courts  
 21 have adjudicated, and continue to adjudicate, many cases  
 22 involving all companies in an impartial and fair manner."  
 23 Even more revealing, Claimants themselves have  
 24 more than once won their cases against the Government in  
 25 various Ecuadorian courts. In 2000, Texaco and other oil

03:46 1 companies have gone before the Supreme Court against the  
 2 Government. In 2002, Texaco prevailed in three cases  
 3 before the Superior Court of Quito. The Supreme Court  
 4 Judgment was--or is R-812, and these three cases are R-809  
 5 to R-811.  
 6 In 2007, Texaco received a 1.5 million U.S.  
 7 dollars Court Judgment against the Government. That's a  
 8 Judgment of the first Civil Court of Pichincha, R-816. In  
 9 2008, an Appellate Court reversed the dismissal of another  
 10 multimillion dollar Texaco case against the Government,  
 11 and that's R-808.  
 12 A distinct accusation is that Ecuadorian justice  
 13 is not independent from the Government. In specific  
 14 instances such as the Lago Agrio Case, President Correa or  
 15 a high governmental personality would exercise a pressure  
 16 on judges, even threaten them if they did not issue the  
 17 desired Judgment. These are unproven accusations. You  
 18 must not only accuse, you must prove the truth of what you  
 19 accuse the person of. And as Mr. Bloom reminded us in his  
 20 presentation, even Mr. Guerra, in circumstances in which  
 21 it was clear that he was not lying, said that there had  
 22 been no interference by the Government in the Lago Agrio  
 23 Case.  
 24 As to public statements by Ecuador's President or  
 25 other officials against Claimants in relation with the

03:48 1 Lago Agrio Case, what counts after all with regard to the  
 2 futility argument is whether Ecuadorian courts are  
 3 influenced by these statements or not. And by their  
 4 Judgments, they have proved that they remain independent.  
 5 One notorious example is the dismissal of the criminal  
 6 charges brought in 2011: dismissed by the National Court  
 7 of Justice of criminal charges brought in relation with  
 8 the Lago Agrio Case against two of Claimants' attorneys.  
 9 So, why wouldn't a court seized of a CPA action  
 10 show the same impartiality and independence?  
 11 I now come to the second aspect of the futility  
 12 argument. According to Claimants, the available remedies  
 13 are futility also because the Lago Agrio Judgments are  
 14 already enforceable. There are two aspects in that  
 15 argument:  
 16 First, enforceability in itself would have made  
 17 further recourses futile; and, second, Ecuador would have  
 18 violated international law by disobeying the Tribunal's  
 19 Order to stay enforcement of the Lago Agrio Judgment.  
 20 First aspect, according to Claimants, because the  
 21 Lago Agrio Judgment is enforceable, no further remedy is  
 22 to be sought, it would necessarily be futile. In his  
 23 first Opinion, Jan Paulsson, as Expert--as he then  
 24 was--says that he's not aware of any other case with a  
 25 factual pattern matching the present one, a Judgment that

03:50 1 is enforceable and which its beneficiaries try to enforce  
 2 in other countries. I'm wondering whether the reason for  
 3 that lack of precedent may not be that no one had yet had  
 4 the strange idea to pretend that because the Judgment is  
 5 already enforceable, no further remedy is to be exhausted.  
 6 At least from Jan Paulsson's remark, it results there is  
 7 no basis under international law for the proposition that  
 8 exhaustion of remedy does not apply when a judgment is  
 9 enforceable.  
 10 The only exception to the obligation to exercise  
 11 local recourses is when a recourse would not constitute an  
 12 effective remedy. Effectiveness is the only logical  
 13 requirement.  
 14 And it is true that in some situations there is  
 15 no possibility of redress when a first instance or appeal  
 16 judgment has been enforced, and the Claimants give an  
 17 example. The European Commission on Human Rights has held  
 18 that if an order to extradite or expel a foreigner has  
 19 been made, a court action that would not suspend the Order  
 20 does not need to be exhausted. But that is obvious,  
 21 because if you are expelled or, in particular, extradited,  
 22 the harm is beyond repair, and the setting aside of the  
 23 Order does not constitute an efficient remedy.  
 24 But the situation here is completely different.  
 25 The question is: Do the enforceability and the ensuing

03:52 1 attempts to enforce the Lago Agrio Judgment in various  
 2 countries constitute an unrepairable harm. And the answer  
 3 is no for two reasons: First, the respective duration of  
 4 a CPA action and of enforcement proceedings. Chevron  
 5 could have started a CPA action in 2011. A statistical  
 6 review of court practice in Ecuador reveals that CPA  
 7 judgments, on average, issue approximately 17 months from  
 8 the date of commencement of the proceedings. In other  
 9 words, assuming that the Court seized of the CPA action  
 10 had found that there had been denial of justice in the  
 11 Lago Agrio Judgment already today any attempt to enforce  
 12 the Judgment in any country would necessarily fail.

13 It's true that according to Chevron a CPA action  
 14 would have taken, in fact, years. But first, that's  
 15 contrary to the statistics I have mentioned, and, second,  
 16 since Chevron did not start a CPA action, it cannot prove  
 17 how long it would have taken to obtain a judgment, and the  
 18 burden of proof rests on the Claimants.

19 In addition, the Lago Agrio Plaintiffs are not  
 20 close to enforcing the Lago Agrio Judgment against  
 21 Chevron. One has here to distinguish enforcement in  
 22 Ecuador and enforcement abroad.

23 In Ecuador, the Plaintiffs have attached certain  
 24 trademarks concerning the lubricant business. But these  
 25 trademarks have no value because, in the framework of the

03:53 1 sale of the lubricant business to Swiss Oil, Chevron has  
 2 consented a royalty-free license to Swiss Oil. And no one  
 3 else at Swiss Oil--than Swiss Oil--can be interested in  
 4 these trademarks. For that reason, no transfer of the  
 5 trademarks to the Plaintiffs have occurred--has  
 6 occurred--and if, even if someday it did, these trademarks  
 7 have no value.

8 Abroad--abroad--Plaintiffs have started actions  
 9 for recognition of the Judgment in Canada, Brazil, and  
 10 Argentina. They have obtained no success yet and no  
 11 success is to be expected before years, for several  
 12 reasons: First, if really Chevron--as Chevron contends,  
 13 there has been a denial of justice, and Chevron can  
 14 convince the courts in these countries, then Plaintiffs'  
 15 motion for recognition will be denied.

16 Secondly, even if Chevron does not convince these  
 17 courts, the undisputed Expert Report submitted by Ecuador  
 18 for the three countries show that enforcement proceedings  
 19 with the various levels of appeal that are open would  
 20 demand a period of several years before any money could be  
 21 collected. These Reports have been drafted by George  
 22 Pollock for Canada, Marcelo Rufino for Argentina, and  
 23 Juliera Anginoni for Brazil.

24 Therefore, it is even more certain that had  
 25 Chevron started a CPA action in 2011 or even later or even

03:55 1 now, it would not have completed its actions for  
 2 enforcement before the CPA action would have been  
 3 adjudicated. It would be for Chevron to prove the  
 4 opposite. And it's an impossible proof, first because you  
 5 cannot prove what is false, and, second, because the only  
 6 way to know for certain would have been for Chevron to  
 7 start the CPA action.

8 The second reason for not following Chevron is  
 9 that even if the Lago Agrio Judgment was enforced before  
 10 the hypothetical successful CPA action was completed, the  
 11 money would have to be given back to Chevron. As the  
 12 Tribunal knows, the Lago Agrio Court ordered the  
 13 Plaintiffs to establish a commercial Trust with the Amazon  
 14 Defense Front as beneficiary. If a CPA Court annulled the  
 15 Lago Agrio Judgment, the trust would be forced to give  
 16 back the money, which it would not have had time to spend.

17 Now, Chevron also blames Ecuador for not having  
 18 stayed the enforcement of the Judgment contrary to what  
 19 the Tribunal has ordered. Three remarks:

20 First, the argument is not relevant, since the  
 21 attempts to enforce would have failed in case of a  
 22 successful CPA action and the enforceability could have  
 23 caused no harm to Chevron if it had chosen to start a CPA  
 24 action.

25 Second, the reason why the Judgment is

03:57 1 enforceable is not that there has been any special action  
 2 by the State to make to it enforceable. It is enforceable  
 3 by the operation of the law, as is normal in all civil law  
 4 countries when you have had an appeal. It's, in fact,  
 5 Chevron which could have stayed the enforceability by  
 6 posting a bond, but it did not post a bond, and it did not  
 7 even request the Court to fix the amount of a bond. And  
 8 such a bond in Ecuador, as has been shown in these  
 9 proceedings, generally represents between 1 percent and  
 10 5 percent of the amounts at stake.

11 And, third, there was no other way under  
 12 Ecuadorian law to stay the enforceability. Here, we have  
 13 to respectfully disagree with the Tribunal's statements in  
 14 its Fourth Interim Award that, I quote: "Ecuador could  
 15 not be excused for the failure to fulfill through any of  
 16 its branches the obligation to stay the  
 17 enforceability"--this obligation created by the Tribunal  
 18 itself.

19 The Court of Appeals had to decide in the context  
 20 of a dispute between two private parties: Chevron on one  
 21 side and the Plaintiffs on the other side.

22 The Plaintiffs benefited of an enforceable  
 23 Judgment. There was no way for the Court, under  
 24 Ecuadorian law which it has to apply, to deprive the  
 25 Plaintiffs of the enforceability of their Judgment. In



03:59 1 addition, that would have meant violating Article 25 of  
 2 the American Convention on Human Rights, to which Ecuador  
 3 is a party, as the Court of Appeals noted.  
 4 We have on the Slide two extracts of the  
 5 decision: "Article 25 of the American Convention on Human  
 6 Rights imposes on Ecuador (as a member State) the  
 7 obligation to guarantee the right of access to justice,  
 8 that is, an effective judicial protection, which  
 9 necessarily includes the guarantee of the enforcement of a  
 10 judgment, since the absence of enforcement would render it  
 11 entirely ineffective."  
 12 Second quotation: "This Chamber determined that,  
 13 in the event we were to act outside the boundaries of the  
 14 law, as requested by Chevron, and take special measures to  
 15 'prevent the enforcement of the Judgment,' this Court  
 16 would be allowing the perpetration of a violation to the  
 17 human rights obligations of Ecuador."  
 18 I leave aside the questions whether, one, an  
 19 international tribunal has the power to create an  
 20 obligation that would bind a State under international  
 21 law, and, second, whether a tribunal has the power to  
 22 interfere with the internal functioning of the  
 23 institutions of the State.  
 24 To conclude, for all these reasons, Chevron  
 25 should have exhausted local remedies, particularly the CPA

04:01 1 recourse, and having failed to do that, its  
 2 denial-of-justice claim is not ripe. These recourses, and  
 3 particularly the CPA action, is in no way futile. Chevron  
 4 has not established that the Court which would have been  
 5 seized would not have been independent and impartial, and  
 6 it has not established that there would have been a risk  
 7 of enforcement in Ecuador or abroad before the CPA action  
 8 would have been completed.  
 9 I'm now turning the floor to Ricardo Ugarte, who  
 10 will deal with another aspect of the exhaustion of  
 11 remedies.  
 12 MR. UGARTE: Thank you, Professor Mayer.  
 13 Members of the Tribunal, I will briefly expand  
 14 upon the doctrine of exhaustion and its specific  
 15 application to the ghostwriting allegations.  
 16 During other parts of this Opening Statement, my  
 17 colleagues will highlight how the vast weight of evidence  
 18 demonstrates that the ghostwriting allegations are simply  
 19 false, but those claims fail for an additional reason:  
 20 All of the Claims filed before this Tribunal that arise  
 21 from those ghostwriting allegations failed by virtue of  
 22 the doctrine of exhaustion. I will demonstrate this by  
 23 first describing the timing of Claimants' ghostwriting  
 24 allegations and, second, by demonstrating that Chevron had  
 25 numerous effective procedural remedies available to them

04:03 1 to address precisely these types of allegations before the  
 2 Judgment was ever issued.  
 3 So, first, let's discuss the timing of Claimants'  
 4 allegations.  
 5 On the slide before you, you will see a timeline  
 6 of the ghostwriting allegations. As you see, the slide is  
 7 presented in two colors to separate fact from fiction. In  
 8 blue are the undisputed facts. In red are Claimants'  
 9 unproven allegations that derive from affidavits that  
 10 Chevron submitted as evidence in the RICO litigation, and  
 11 the exhibit numbers to those sworn affidavits are  
 12 referenced in the timeline.  
 13 I would like to briefly run through this timeline  
 14 with you.  
 15 First, in October 2009, according to Chevron,  
 16 Dr. Guerra allegedly advises Chevron that he could fix the  
 17 entire case for Chevron through Judge Zambrano. Shortly  
 18 thereafter, in February 2010, Judge Zambrano steps down as  
 19 judge of the Lago Agrio Litigation when Judge Ordoñez is  
 20 elected President of the Court.  
 21 Next, in August 2010, Chevron successfully  
 22 recuses Judge Ordoñez, thereby reinstating Zambrano as the  
 23 Presiding Judge of the Lago Agrio Case as of October 2010.  
 24 Next, in October 2010, according to Chevron, Chevron was  
 25 allegedly tipped off to information that supposedly led

04:05 1 Chevron's attorneys, including its lead trial attorney,  
 2 Mr. Callejas, to understand that Judge Zambrano was sure  
 3 to reach an agreement with Plaintiffs to issue the  
 4 Judgment in their favor.  
 5 A few months later, on February 14, 2011, Judge  
 6 Zambrano nevertheless proceeds to issue the Judgment.  
 7 As you can see from the allegations referenced in  
 8 red in this timeline, on Chevron's own allegations,  
 9 Chevron says it was aware of the ghostwriting allegations  
 10 well before the Judgment was issued. And if you accept,  
 11 assuming arguendo, the ghostwriting allegations, you  
 12 cannot cherry-pick. You have to accept the entire  
 13 ghostwriting case, including the sworn evidence that  
 14 Chevron presented to Judge Kaplan about what they say they  
 15 knew about the purported ghostwriting scheme in  
 16 October 2010. This pre-Judgment knowledge by Chevron is  
 17 sufficient to shut the door on these allegations and all  
 18 the international claims that derive from them.  
 19 By no later than October of 2010, if Chevron  
 20 wanted to hold the entire State of Ecuador accountable  
 21 under international law for these allegations, Chevron was  
 22 duty-bound under the doctrine of exhaustion to pursue the  
 23 procedural remedies that the Ecuadorian judicial system  
 24 put in place for Chevron to address such matters at the  
 25 trial level, and the Legal Authorities for this

04:06 1 proposition are set forth in our Track 2 Supplemental  
 2 Counter-Memorial of November 2014 at Pages 116 through  
 3 118.  
 4 I want to highlight two of these authorities very  
 5 briefly.  
 6 First, the Appeals Chamber of the United Nations  
 7 held in the Dilalic case that "a Party should not be  
 8 permitted to refrain from making an objection to a matter  
 9 which was apparent during the course of the trial to raise  
 10 it only in the event of an adverse finding against the  
 11 Party."  
 12 Or, as Professor Paulsson put it, "the exhaustion  
 13 rule requires not only the pursuit of appeals, but also,  
 14 while the earlier proceedings were in progress, that the  
 15 complainant availed himself of existing procedural  
 16 mechanisms."  
 17 But Chevron ran afoul of these Basic Principles  
 18 of international law. Chevron by-passed all available  
 19 procedural remedies and refrained from making any  
 20 objection to a matter which they say was apparent to them  
 21 while the trial proceedings were in progress. It is  
 22 uncontested that Chevron failed to report its views to any  
 23 Ecuadorian judicial authorities during the months prior to  
 24 the issuance of the Judgment.  
 25 Now, Ecuador has refuted the ghostwriting

04:08 1 allegations on the merits and does not believe in the  
 2 ghostwriting fairy tale for one minute, nor should this  
 3 Tribunal. But if Chevron did, then Claimants needed to  
 4 come forward to test and address these allegations during  
 5 the trial proceedings by bringing a motion to recuse Judge  
 6 Zambrano or by seeking to remove him by an application  
 7 with the Judicial Council, or by reporting this  
 8 information to the local bar authorities. But Chevron did  
 9 none of these things at that time.  
 10 It is uncontested that Chevron failed to use any  
 11 of these available and effective remedies in Ecuador  
 12 during the Lago Agrio Trial court proceedings during the  
 13 critical months before the Judgment was issued.  
 14 The existence of these remedies and the relevant  
 15 code provisions under Ecuadorian law that make clear that  
 16 these remedies were available to Chevron are cited in our  
 17 Track 2 Supplemental Rejoinder on March 17, 2015, at  
 18 Paragraphs 89 and 97.  
 19 Claimants do not contest that these procedural  
 20 remedies, such as recusal motions, were available to them  
 21 during the trial court proceedings. Rather, Claimants'  
 22 claim that these remedies were futile because President  
 23 Correa allegedly controlled the judiciary. But that  
 24 assertion is pure speculation and is uncontradicted  
 25 and--excuse me, is contradicted by the evidence of the

04:09 1 successful recusal motions that Chevron itself brought  
 2 during the Lago Agrio Litigation.  
 3 Recall from the timeline that we just reviewed  
 4 that Chevron, in fact, had just successfully recused Judge  
 5 Ordoñez, and Chevron had no hesitation in bringing a  
 6 motion to recuse Judge Ordoñez on the grounds of being  
 7 biased. Chevron's application for recusal, as you can see  
 8 from the next slide, was based on allegations of undue  
 9 delay and bias by Judge Ordoñez.  
 10 The fact is that Ecuador's Executive Branch has  
 11 never prevented Ecuadorian judges from being recused as  
 12 evidenced by the fact that Chevron successfully removed  
 13 judges in the Lago Agrio Litigation itself, so Chevron  
 14 cannot establish that these remedies were futile.  
 15 Furthermore, it is uncontested that Claimants did  
 16 not whisper a word of this fairy tale to even this  
 17 Tribunal until after the Judgment was issued. Just as  
 18 Chevron could have pursued municipal remedies in Ecuador  
 19 before the Judgment was issued, Claimants could have  
 20 sought Interim Measures from this Tribunal to prevent the  
 21 harm of which they now complain.  
 22 Remember that Claimants say that Zambrano was  
 23 shopping around the Judgment to both the Plaintiffs and  
 24 Chevron. They never alleged that Zambrano was acting on  
 25 orders from higher authorities. Ecuador and this Tribunal

04:11 1 were kept in the dark during the pre-Judgment period of  
 2 the knowledge that Chevron says they possessed. Instead,  
 3 the--Chevron saved these allegations for Judge Kaplan.  
 4 Chevron first surfaced these allegations within 24 hours  
 5 of the Judgment being issued. At R-1320, Chevron had  
 6 filed a pleading in the RICO case in which they said  
 7 "Chevron suspects that Judge Zambrano received secret  
 8 assistance drafting the Judgment, and anticipates  
 9 requesting discovery on this issue shortly."  
 10 Members of the Tribunal, Chevron wants you to  
 11 hold Ecuador's entire judicial system accountable for the  
 12 ghostwriting allegations under principles of customary  
 13 international law and under the Treaty. But under  
 14 international law, Chevron cannot ask this Tribunal to  
 15 help Chevron when they did not help themselves at the  
 16 trial court level.  
 17 Ecuador is responsible for the final product of  
 18 its judicial system, but what Ecuador is not responsible  
 19 for is Chevron's deliberate and strategic decision to  
 20 bypass effective procedural remedies that were available  
 21 during the trial court level that would have addressed the  
 22 ghostwriting allegations then and there.  
 23 For these reasons, Ecuador would submit that  
 24 Claimants failed to satisfy a critical substantive element  
 25 of their denial-of-justice claims. Indeed, as my next

04:13 1 presentation will make it clear, when Chevron chose to  
 2 bypass effective procedural remedies to address the  
 3 ghostwriting allegations at the trial level, they also  
 4 forfeited their right to bring any treaty claims based on  
 5 those allegations.

6 And with that, Ecuador concludes its oral  
 7 submissions on certain legal aspects of the  
 8 denial-of-justice claim, and I would like to say next a  
 9 few words about the most prominent legal flaw in  
 10 Claimants' treaty claims.

11 With respect to Claimants' treaty claims, later  
 12 this afternoon my colleagues will highlight the  
 13 fundamental flaws in both Claimants' evidence and their  
 14 due process allegations. I will focus on another  
 15 important difference that divides the Parties: That is  
 16 whether the requirement to exhaust local remedies  
 17 constitutes a substantive element that Claimants must  
 18 satisfy to establish the specific treaty breaches that  
 19 Claimants have pled before this Tribunal.

20 Ecuador submits that the doctrine of exhaustion  
 21 of local remedies applies with full force to defeat all of  
 22 Claimants' treaty claims. This is clear for two reasons:

23 First, all of Claimants' treaty claims ultimately  
 24 depend on how Ecuador's judicial system conducted itself  
 25 in the Lago Agrio Litigation.

04:14 1 Second, investment treaty jurisprudence makes  
 2 clear that when an investment treaty claim arises out of  
 3 judicial conduct, exhaustion of local remedies constitutes  
 4 a substantive element that the investor must satisfy.

5 So, let's begin with an analysis of Claimants'  
 6 allegations. Ecuador submits that each Treaty breach that  
 7 Claimants have asserted requires this Tribunal to find  
 8 that somehow that the Ecuadorian judicial system violated  
 9 the substantive standards of the Treaty. Every single  
 10 allegation involves either just the judiciary or hybrid  
 11 allegations that allege that somehow Ecuador's Executive  
 12 interfered with the judiciary's handling of the Lago Agrio  
 13 proceedings.

14 What I am contending can be put another way:  
 15 Would the Claimants have filed this treaty arbitration but  
 16 for the existence of the Lago Agrio Litigation? Of course  
 17 not. The allegations underpinning their treaty claims are  
 18 intimately focused on that litigation and the way the  
 19 Ecuadorian judicial system acted in that litigation.

20 Indeed, this Tribunal, at Paragraph 5 of its  
 21 March 2015 decision, found that, "it has become  
 22 increasingly clear during this arbitration that the  
 23 Claimants' principal claim under the USA-Ecuador BIT is  
 24 made against the Respondent for multiple denials of  
 25 justice within the Ecuadorian legal system."

04:16 1 The characterization of Claimants' case is fully  
 2 supported by Section 13 of Claimants' January 2015  
 3 Memorial, where you will find Claimants' latest iteration  
 4 of their Request for Relief. As you can see from the  
 5 highlighted portions of the slide before you, the Lago  
 6 Agrio Judgment appears in every single one of their  
 7 requests for declaratory and injunctive relief. Even in  
 8 Claimants' request for damages, the sole basis for  
 9 indemnification concerns the Judgment issued by the  
 10 Ecuadorian courts.

11 In other words, while they accuse Ecuador's  
 12 Executive of interfering with the judiciary or their  
 13 purported rights under the Settlement Agreement, there is  
 14 no basis upon which the actions of Ecuador's non-judicial  
 15 organs caused Claimants an independent harm or damage.  
 16 Every treaty claim and claim for relief ultimately stems  
 17 from the results of the Lago Agrio Litigation and the  
 18 judiciary's handling thereof.

19 Now, this is an important determination because  
 20 if the crux of Claimants' allegations concern the conduct  
 21 of the Ecuadorian judicial system, then this Tribunal  
 22 cannot allow Claimants to circumvent the requirement of  
 23 exhaustion of local remedies.

24 Now, I would like to briefly turn to the law on  
 25 the applicability of exhaustion of treaty claims based on

04:17 1 judicial conduct.

2 First, in his comprehensive treatise on the  
 3 subject, Professor Paulsson states: "To repeat, States  
 4 may, and do, enter into treaties that provide for direct  
 5 access by foreigners to international tribunals without  
 6 first having to exhaust local remedies. Such waivers give  
 7 foreigners the assurance that internationally wrongful  
 8 conduct will not be swept under the rug indefinitely.

9 In the particular case of denial of justice,  
 10 however, claims will not succeed unless the victim has  
 11 indeed exhausted municipal remedies, or unless there is an  
 12 explicit waiver of a type yet to be invented. This is  
 13 neither a paradox nor an aberration, for it is in the very  
 14 nature of the delict that a State is judged by the final  
 15 product--or at least a sufficiently final product--of its  
 16 administration of justice."

17 Likewise, numerous investment tribunals have  
 18 expressly held that when an investment treaty claim is  
 19 premised upon the judicial action of the host State, the  
 20 claim cannot succeed unless the Claimant has exhausted all  
 21 effective available remedies.

22 This was the holding by the Arbitral Tribunal in  
 23 the well-known and highly instructive case of Loewen  
 24 versus the United States. As you can see from the  
 25 following slide, in that case, the Tribunal dismissed

04:18 1 Loewen's investment treaty claims because Loewen had  
 2 failed to prove that it had exhausted the available  
 3 remedies under U.S. municipal law. Nor can Claimants  
 4 avoid the same fate as the investor in Loewen simply  
 5 because Loewen's treaty claims arose under NAFTA.  
 6 The point is simply that when assessing an act of  
 7 the judiciary, the law imposes a systemic obligation on  
 8 the host State, not a requirement that every judge or  
 9 lower court be infallible. Indeed, there are numerous  
 10 non-NAFTA decisions that support Ecuador's position. For  
 11 example, in the Jan de Nul arbitration, the Claimants  
 12 there also implored the Tribunal to jettison the  
 13 requirement of exhaustion and evaluate Egypt's judicial  
 14 system as part of the supposedly broader  
 15 fair-and-equitable-treatment standard. The Tribunal  
 16 categorically rejected that argument.  
 17 As you can see, the Tribunal held that, where a  
 18 judgment lies at the core of the treaty claim, the  
 19 relevant standards to trigger State responsibility for its  
 20 judiciary are the standards of denial of justice,  
 21 including the requirement of exhaustion of local remedies.  
 22 The Tribunal found that the investor could simply not  
 23 circumvent the requirement of exhaustion by dressing up  
 24 its denial-of-justice claims as treaty claims just as  
 25 Claimants seek to do here.

04:20 1 There is also the matter of Pantechniki versus  
 2 Albania arising under the Greek Albania BIT. In that  
 3 case, Professor Jan Paulsson, acting as a Sole Arbitrator,  
 4 analyzed the denial-of-justice claim in the context of a  
 5 Fair and Equitable Treatment provision that was  
 6 incorporated in the Treaty by agreement of the Parties.  
 7 Professor Paulsson rejected the investor's claim without  
 8 hesitation because it was based on the Claimants'  
 9 purported mistreatment at the hands of Albania's lower and  
 10 appellate courts, and yet the Claimant has failed to  
 11 pursue his appeal to the top Court in that country.  
 12 In a quote that is fitting here, Professor  
 13 Paulsson stated: "Denial of justice does not arise until  
 14 a reasonable opportunity to correct aberrant judicial  
 15 conduct has been given to the system as a whole."  
 16 And as with denial of justice claims under  
 17 customary international law, there is no hard-and-fast  
 18 rule regarding direct versus indirect remedies when  
 19 assessing which remedies must be exhausted to establish a  
 20 treaty claim. The issue of directness is not the  
 21 determining issue. The test is whether or not the local  
 22 remedy is effective to address the harm complained of,  
 23 period.  
 24 Thus, for example, Claimants cannot argue that  
 25 the CPA is not an effective remedy on the basis that they

04:21 1 consider it to be indirect. Indeed, the remedy that the  
 2 Claimant in the Loewen Case failed to pursue was far more  
 3 indirect than the ones available to Chevron here.  
 4 Loewen's mortal sin was failing to petition the  
 5 U.S. Federal Supreme Court to strike down a bond  
 6 requirement imposed by the Mississippi State Courts which  
 7 Loewen could not afford to pay to stay the enforcement of  
 8 the State Court's judgment. That remedy is far more  
 9 indirect than the effective remedies which Chevron has  
 10 available here.  
 11 Again, all effective municipal remedies must be  
 12 pursued, and whether a so-called "indirect remedy" is  
 13 effective or not is a determination that must perforce be  
 14 made by an investment tribunal on a case-by-case basis  
 15 just as Professor Paulsson indicated when he was the sole  
 16 arbitrator in Pantechniki, as you can see from the bottom  
 17 of the slide that is before you.  
 18 The finding that the requirement of exhaustion  
 19 applies to all those treaty claims that arise from the  
 20 judicial conduct of the host State, as held in Loewen, Jan  
 21 de Nul, Pantechniki and others, applies here with full  
 22 force. Like the investment treaties at issue in those  
 23 cases, there is nothing in the express language of the BIT  
 24 between the U.S. and Ecuador that expressly derogates from  
 25 the requirement that local remedies must be exhausted when

04:23 1 judicial action is the basis of the Treaty breach.  
 2 It would be unprecedented for this Tribunal to  
 3 find that the U.S. and Ecuador implicitly or tacitly  
 4 agreed to jettison or waive this well-established  
 5 principle of international law when the Treaty breach is  
 6 based on judicial conduct. Such a waiver would have  
 7 necessarily been explicit or express, and no such waiver  
 8 exists in the present Treaty.  
 9 Indeed, the cases to have interpreted the  
 10 U.S.-Ecuador BIT in evaluating claims arising out of  
 11 judicial conduct support Ecuador's position here. For  
 12 example, even the Commercial Cases Award upon which  
 13 Claimants so heavily rely noted the importance of general  
 14 principles of customary international law in interpreting  
 15 the U.S.-Ecuador Treaty.  
 16 The Commercial Cases Tribunal, in its Partial  
 17 Award, found that the effective-means standard contained  
 18 in Article II(7) and general denial-of-justice principles  
 19 were inextricably linked. The Tribunal on that case  
 20 stated "given the related genesis of the two standards,  
 21 the interpretation and application of Article II(7) is  
 22 informed by the law on denial of justice."  
 23 While the Commercial Cases Tribunal ultimately  
 24 rejected a strict exhaustion of local-remedies standard  
 25 without explaining what "strict" means in this context,

04:24 1 that Tribunal nevertheless still found that the Claimants  
2 in that case must have adequately utilized the means made  
3 available to them to assert claims and enforce rights in  
4 Ecuador in order to prove a breach of the BIT.  
5 Similarly, in *Duke versus Ecuador*, the Tribunal  
6 in examining the judiciary's conduct also found that  
7 Article II(7) "seeks to implement and form part of the  
8 more general guarantee against denial of justice."  
9 It then proceeded to determine whether the  
10 investors' failure to pursue local remedies was justified.  
11 In other words, all of these cases found that the  
12 investors' exhaustion of adequate and effective local  
13 remedies was required to prove their treaty claims.  
14 Claimants also rely heavily on the *Petrobart*  
15 versus *Kyrgyz Republic Case* and the *White Industries Award*  
16 as the only examples Claimants have been able to find  
17 where Claimants allege that the Tribunal appeared to relax  
18 the exhaustion requirement.  
19 Claimants' interpretation of those Awards is  
20 simply incorrect. Neither of those two decisions  
21 expressly discards the exhaustion requirement when  
22 analyzing the conduct of the judiciary. In *Petrobart*, the  
23 Tribunal focused on the conduct of the Executive Branch in  
24 imposing liability under the Treaty. There, the Executive  
25 Branch stripped the assets of a State-owned company

04:25 1 leaving that company insolvent and unable to satisfy the  
2 debts owed to the Claimants. And in contrast to the  
3 situation here, the *Kyrgyz Republic* never argued that  
4 there were any further remedies to exhaust in their  
5 courts.  
6 Nor is there an Investment Treaty Award that  
7 applies the legitimate expectations tests so broadly as to  
8 constitute a waiver of the exhaustion requirement when the  
9 treaty claims at issue are based upon judicial conduct.  
10 There is not a single case that stands for that  
11 proposition. The closest case to do that was the *White*  
12 *Industries* decision that Claimants rely upon, but even  
13 that case never held that the exhaustion requirement did  
14 not apply as a general matter to treaty claims based on  
15 judicial conduct.  
16 As we'll be seeing from the next slide, the *White*  
17 *Industries Tribunal* simply never reached the issue of  
18 exhaustion on the one claim that was assessed under the  
19 legitimate expectations test. It didn't have to because  
20 it was easier for the Tribunal to simply show how  
21 ill-suited a test that relies on specific assurances is,  
22 when it is clear that no State's judicial system gives  
23 unambiguous and specific assurances to a specific investor  
24 or unidentifiable group.  
25 Ecuador submits that the legitimate expectations

04:27 1 test does not apply under this Treaty, particularly when  
2 treaty claims are founded upon judicial conduct. But if  
3 the Tribunal is minded to disagree, then Ecuador submits  
4 that the only legitimate expectations that Chevron could  
5 have reasonably had here was that Ecuador's judicial  
6 system would comply within the bounds of well-established  
7 principles of international law which includes the  
8 requirement of exhaustion.  
9 Finally, the *White Industries Award* is of no  
10 moment here for another reason. That case involves a  
11 systemic undue delay in a court system, an issue which can  
12 indeed constitute an exception to the exhaustion  
13 requirement, if proven. Chevron's case here has nothing  
14 to do with a systemic delay by Ecuador's judicial system.  
15 In conclusion, Members of the Tribunal, Ecuador  
16 would submit that this Tribunal should uphold the  
17 applicability of the exhaustion requirement as a  
18 substantive element of Claimants' treaty claims because  
19 they are all intimately founded upon the conduct of  
20 Ecuador's judicial system. Claimants' clear and  
21 deliberate failure to exhaust local remedies means they  
22 have failed to satisfy a critical substantive element  
23 concerning each and every one of their treaty claims.  
24 And on that, Ecuador concludes its submission for  
25 this part of its Opening Statement.

04:28 1 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you very much. I think  
2 that was the time when you were indicating we might have a  
3 mid-afternoon break.  
4 MR. BLOOM: Exactly.  
5 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Well, let's break now for 15  
6 minutes. We'll come back at quarter to 5:00. Thank you.  
7 (Brief recess.)  
8 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Let's resume.  
9 MR. BLOOM: Mr. President and Members of the  
10 Tribunal, we now turn to our final session. Having covered  
11 this morning jurisdiction, exhaustion, and Treaty, we now  
12 turn to the denial-of-justice issues.  
13 Claimants contend that the Court's application of  
14 Ecuadorian law represented a legal absurdity, and  
15 Claimants also contend that the Court's resolution of  
16 certain other Ecuadorian legal issues represented a denial  
17 of due process. In truth, and in fact, the Ecuadorian  
18 legal issues raised by Claimants relate to ordinary and  
19 oftentimes mundane matters of Ecuadorian law, the  
20 resolution of which were hardly extraordinary. In each  
21 instance, the Court's resolution of these issues was  
22 appropriate and proper, and well within the ambit of the  
23 juridically possible.  
24 Mr. Leonard will address these issues.  
25 At the conclusion of that, he will then respond

04:48 1 to Mr. Coriell's presentation regarding the implications  
 2 of the Track 1B Decision of March 12, 2015. At that  
 3 point, Mr. Leonard will hand the microphone over to  
 4 Mr. Ewing and to Ms. Silver. They will address and  
 5 respond to the Claimants' factual absurdities argument.  
 6 Mr. Ewing will address the issues relating to  
 7 contamination in the Oriente, while Ms. Silver will  
 8 address the health concerns.

9 Finally, we'll respond to Claimants' claims of  
 10 corruption, and in this regard you'll be hearing from  
 11 Mr. Ewing, my colleague, Mr. Goldstein and me. And with  
 12 that, I'll turn the fining phone over to Mr. Leonard.

13 MR. LEONARD: Thank you, Mr. Bloom.

14 Mr. President, Members of the Tribunal, always a  
 15 pleasure to appear before you.

16 The topic that I'm about to address, is not as  
 17 pleasant, but the good news is that my presentation should  
 18 take no more than 20 minutes, so please bear with me while  
 19 I address Claimants' allegations of legal error and due  
 20 process violations in the Lago Agrio Litigation.

21 I must admit to a certain level of reluctance in  
 22 addressing this topic. That Claimants' arguments are  
 23 meritless as a matter of municipal law seems almost  
 24 besides the point. What is most objectionable about these  
 25 aspects of Claimants' case is that their arguments do not

04:51 1 accepted presumption in favor of the judicial process by  
 2 means of clear and convincing evidence of highly egregious  
 3 conduct. Claimants have utterly failed to meet their  
 4 burden, and their bid to turn these proceedings into an  
 5 additional layer of appeal is without basis in  
 6 international law and must be rejected.

7 Now, turning to Claimants' specific complaints,  
 8 they include the following eight allegations.

9 First, the causation analysis in the Lago Agrio  
 10 judgment is substantively absurd; second, the Judgment  
 11 improperly amalgamates TexPet, Texaco, and Chevron; third,  
 12 the Judgment Awards extra petita damages to the  
 13 Plaintiffs; four, it improperly joins claims under the  
 14 oral summary proceedings; five, it allows for the  
 15 retroactive application of the EMA; six, the Court  
 16 improperly allowed the Plaintiffs to withdraw their  
 17 earlier request for the production of certain judicial  
 18 inspections; seven, the Court improperly appointed Cabrera  
 19 as a global expert;

20 And, eight, the Court purportedly refused to  
 21 consider Chevron's essential error petitions.

22 While examining these issues, the Tribunal will  
 23 find that some of Claimants' arguments are clever ones,  
 24 but will also conclude that not one of them is supported  
 25 by Ecuadorian law or by the facts on which it prefers to

04:50 1 belong in these proceedings. They are appellate-type  
 2 arguments that ought to be raised and were, in fact,  
 3 raised before the courts of competent jurisdiction over  
 4 those matters. This is not one of those courts. With all  
 5 the respect that is due to this Tribunal, you do not sit  
 6 here as a supra-national court of appeal and should  
 7 decline the Claimants' invitation to do so. There is  
 8 extensive authority against the possibility of  
 9 international tribunals substituting their Judgment for  
 10 that of a municipal Court. I do not intend to address any  
 11 of that today, and will simply refer the Tribunal to the  
 12 Republic's submissions on this subject, but I do want the  
 13 record to be clear about the Republic's objection in this  
 14 respect.

15 It is respectfully submitted that unless you find  
 16 that Mr. Fajardo wrote the Judgment, a hypothesis that you  
 17 will find is wholly unsupported by the evidence, you must  
 18 refrain from engaging in any exercise intended to  
 19 second-guess the findings of Ecuador's courts on these  
 20 same issues that Claimants have now put before you. An  
 21 international tribunal may substitute its Judgment for  
 22 that of a municipal Court only in the most extreme and  
 23 unusual circumstances. Such circumstances are not present  
 24 here.

25 Claimants were required to overcome the generally

04:53 1 rely.

2 For example, as to the first of Claimants'  
 3 complaints, Dr. Coronel and Dr. Barros argue that the  
 4 Judgment does not establish a causal connection between  
 5 TexPet's operations and the alleged harm at issue. This  
 6 assertion is factually incorrect. Starting at Part 6 of  
 7 the Judgment under the heading "Civil Liability, the basis  
 8 of the allegation," and concluding at Part 10, the Court  
 9 engages in an extensive discussion about the evidence of  
 10 widespread contamination in the former Concession Area and  
 11 the causal nexus between such contamination and TexPet's  
 12 operations.

13 Claimants themselves quote the Judgment's  
 14 introduction to the relevant causation analysis in their  
 15 most recent submission. At Paragraph 141 of their  
 16 Supplemental Reply in Track 2, Claimants quote the  
 17 following language from the Judgment, which you can see on  
 18 the screen, and I quote: "As has been explained, the  
 19 strict-liability regime favors the victim of the harm, who  
 20 must only prove the harm and the resulting causal nexus in  
 21 order for his action for harm to succeed. In view of the  
 22 foregoing, what truly needs to be analyzed is causation."

23 Part 7 through 10 of the Judgment described the  
 24 Court's analysis and its findings that the record shows  
 25 sufficient evidence of pollution arising from TexPet's

04:54 1 operations as well as a credible threat of contingent harm  
 2 to those exposed to the contaminated lands and waters.  
 3 Claimants also rely, albeit for different  
 4 purpose, on the Court of Appeals examination of the lower  
 5 court's causation analysis, and I quote from Page 13 of  
 6 the appellate Decision in Lago Agrio; this language can  
 7 also be found at Paragraph 142 of Claimants' Track 2  
 8 Supplemental Rejoinder. You have the language on the  
 9 screen, and I quote: "The division considers that the  
 10 analysis of Civil Liability, clear in the lower Judgment,  
 11 is the appropriate one. The analysis of the relationship  
 12 between damage and cause in the Ecuadorian Amazon is sound  
 13 and derives from the examination of the items of evidence  
 14 that exist in the record. Then, the damages to the  
 15 environment are legally proved and considering the causal  
 16 relationship between the result of damage, and the action  
 17 of the operations of the then TexPet, the division does  
 18 not find reasons to modify what was ordered in the lower  
 19 court's Judgment."  
 20 The factual predicate of Claimants' complaint is  
 21 just lacking, so Claimants resort to misdirection and  
 22 argue through their experts that the Court's analysis is  
 23 not based on the, "technically applicable evidence," for  
 24 determining the causation between an event and a  
 25 particular harm.

04:56 1 Now, this argument is most intriguing. What is  
 2 the technically applicable evidence really is anybody's  
 3 guess. Dr. Coronel maintains that in his expert  
 4 testimony, while another one of Claimants' Experts,  
 5 Dr. Wright, asserts that judicial expectations are it.  
 6 Dr. Andrade shed some light on this nonsense and explained  
 7 that establishing causation in cases of strict liability  
 8 is not particularly complex where the alleged harm is a  
 9 natural consequence of the risky activity at issue. The  
 10 presence in a rainforest of crude oil chemicals and heavy  
 11 metals used in drilling and extraction of hydrocarbons is  
 12 a natural consequence of hydrocarbon activities. It  
 13 cannot be attributed, for example, to the farming  
 14 activities of native inhabitants of the area.  
 15 The law of torts in Ecuador adopted an objective  
 16 or strict-liability regime in cases involving risky  
 17 activities such as this one. Technically, this regime  
 18 adopts a rebuttable presumption of liability for any and  
 19 all harm that is a natural consequence of such activity.  
 20 This presumption can be reversed only if the Defendant can  
 21 break the causal link between the risky activity and the  
 22 alleged harm. This can be done on three grounds, each  
 23 showing that the harm is a product of either one, force  
 24 majeure; two, the exclusive fault of a third party; or,  
 25 three, the exclusive fault of the victim.

04:57 1 The record evidence shows that Chevron was simply  
 2 not in a position to meet this burden. Thirty years of  
 3 oil drilling and extraction operations using arcane  
 4 techniques such as unlined pits to this charged crude and  
 5 drilling mud containing heavy metals and chemicals or  
 6 discharging billions of gallons of toxic production waters  
 7 resulted in widespread and extensive contamination, and  
 8 the Court found this. The Court's analysis in Chapter 7  
 9 through 10 of the Judgment finds this causal link between  
 10 TexPet's activities, and the existing contamination has  
 11 been sufficiently established. That's Point 1.  
 12 There is another aspect to Claimants' argument:  
 13 Claimants complained that Petroecuador's activities  
 14 contributed to the pollution that is being imputed to  
 15 Chevron. And make two different allegations on this  
 16 basis:  
 17 First, Claimants argue that the courts should  
 18 have made every possible effort to determine which  
 19 percentage of the harm was attributable to Petroecuador  
 20 and factor that percentage into its final determination on  
 21 damages. For example, in Claimants' view, the Court  
 22 should have determined how much of the contamination that  
 23 is migrating from TexPet's unlined pits originated in any  
 24 discharge that Petroecuador may have dumped into those  
 25 pits.

04:59 1 But that is not the law in Ecuador. The laws in  
 2 Ecuador impose joint and several liability on all joint  
 3 and consecutive tortfeasors, subject, of course, to the  
 4 Defendant's right to seek contribution from the other  
 5 tortfeasors. It is not the Plaintiffs' burden to allocate  
 6 percentages of liability among possible joint tortfeasors,  
 7 nor is it the Court's to do so, a burden, that if real,  
 8 would indirectly inure to the detriment of the Plaintiff.  
 9 Quite on the contrary, it is the Plaintiffs'  
 10 prerogative to seek full damages from anyone, some or all  
 11 of the joint tortfeasors. Petroecuador's alleged  
 12 contribution to the pollution derived from TexPet's  
 13 operations does not prevent the entry of a judgment  
 14 against Chevron.  
 15 Second, Claimants assert that the Court found  
 16 Chevron liable for contamination, which Chevron allegedly  
 17 proved was exclusively attributable to Petroecuador. But  
 18 this contention is belied by the Judgment's express  
 19 representations that harm exclusively attributable to  
 20 Petroecuador was not being considered in the Judgment. To  
 21 make this claim, Claimants rely not on their scientific  
 22 experts or on any concrete evidence otherwise in this  
 23 record. Claimants rely, instead on the bare assertions of  
 24 their legal experts, Dr. Coronel and Dr. Barros neither of  
 25 which proffers any evidence to support their assertions.

05:00 1 There simply is no basis on this record to conclude that  
 2 the Court erred in imputing to Chevron liability for  
 3 conduct only attributable to Petroecuador.  
 4 Claimants' next argument challenges the Court's  
 5 determination to pierce the corporate veils separating  
 6 TexPet from Texaco and Texaco from Chevron as, and I  
 7 quote, "so deeply flawed that it could only have been the  
 8 product of bias or corruption."  
 9 Claimants do not dispute that it was within the  
 10 Lago Agrio Court's competence and discretion to pierce the  
 11 corporate veil of these companies. Both Parties agree  
 12 that this mechanism is available to any court confronted  
 13 with the alleged abuse of the corporate form. Claimants  
 14 simply disagree with the analysis and ultimate conclusions  
 15 of the Ecuadorian courts on this topic. The Republic  
 16 offered a detailed analysis of the elements that Ecuador's  
 17 courts considered while examining this matter. I will not  
 18 embark on this same level of analysis today. I trust the  
 19 Tribunal has reviewed or will review the Republic's  
 20 submissions in due course. I will simply make two  
 21 somewhat general points:  
 22 First, Claimants have put before this Tribunal  
 23 claims on arguments that have already failed and been  
 24 rejected by courts in Claimants' home country. Delaware  
 25 courts, the courts of the state where Chevron is

05:01 1 incorporated, have articulated several factors that, if  
 2 present, give rise to a presumption that a corporation is  
 3 operating a subsidiary as its alter ego. In those cases  
 4 courts have disregarded the formal corporate separateness  
 5 of the corporation and its subsidiary. Those factors  
 6 include:  
 7 One, whether the corporation was solvent or  
 8 undercapitalized;  
 9 Two, whether the Shareholder siphoned corporate  
 10 funds;  
 11 Three, whether there is identity of corporate  
 12 officers and Directors;  
 13 And, four, generally, whether the corporation  
 14 simply functioned as a facade for the dominant  
 15 Shareholder.  
 16 All of these factors are present in the case of  
 17 Chevron and Texaco. While Texaco was a viable and well  
 18 capitalized operation throughout the duration, entire  
 19 duration of the '73 Concession, the record shows that  
 20 after the merger, Chevron turned Texaco into an empty  
 21 shell. For example, we know that Chevron acquired all of  
 22 Texaco's capital stock and remains Texaco's only  
 23 Shareholder. Texaco transfers all of its money daily to  
 24 one of Chevron's corporate accounts. Texaco thus requires  
 25 financing from Chevron for any number of purposes.

05:03 1 Chevron's Treasury Department handles all wire transfers  
 2 for Texaco. Chevron pays Texaco's U.S. liabilities, tax  
 3 liabilities. After the merger, Chevron sold Texaco's  
 4 former headquarters in New York and moved all operations  
 5 to its own California facility. Since then, Chevron and  
 6 Texaco have shared at least 15 officers and Directors.  
 7 And, finally, Chevron designates Texaco as a  
 8 non-operating company with no ongoing commercial  
 9 enterprises.  
 10 These facts are undisputed.  
 11 Now, presented with these facts, a jury in a  
 12 Mississippi state Court trial recently concluded that  
 13 Texaco is Chevron's alter ego, that Texaco is Chevron's  
 14 alter ego, justifying the Court's piercing of the  
 15 corporate veil between them. Chevron later lost its  
 16 appeal to intermediate appellate court. I refer to the  
 17 Decision in the Simon v. Texaco case, which the Republic  
 18 discussed at large in written submissions starting with  
 19 its Track 2 Counter-Memorial in February of 2013.  
 20 Second, the Lago Agrio Court considered similar  
 21 factors--similar factors--and in its discretion concluded  
 22 that they warranted a finding that Texaco was Chevron's  
 23 instrumentality and that upholding their corporate  
 24 effectiveness would perfect an abuse of the corporate form  
 25 to the detriment of third parties, here the Plaintiffs.

05:04 1 Claimants naturally disagree, and it is quite  
 2 possible that the Tribunal too might have reasons to  
 3 disagree with the reasoning and the ultimate conclusion of  
 4 Ecuador's courts. Reasonable minds can disagree. But  
 5 this is not a retrial, nor is it an appellate proceeding  
 6 before a court of competent jurisdiction. This Tribunal's  
 7 limited jurisdiction is not vested with discretion to  
 8 substitute its Judgment for that of Ecuadorian courts  
 9 absent clear and convincing evidence of egregious  
 10 misapplication of the law.  
 11 That is not the case here. The Ecuador court's  
 12 decision to pierce the corporate veil between Chevron and  
 13 Texaco mirrors the analysis employed by not one but two  
 14 U.S. courts that reached the same conclusion regarding the  
 15 same corporate entities on the basis of the same facts. I  
 16 submit to you that those facts more than sufficiently  
 17 support the Ecuadorian Court's findings, but at a minimum,  
 18 the fact that both the first instance and appellate courts  
 19 of Mississippi found it appropriate to pierce the  
 20 corporate veil of these companies speaks at least to the  
 21 reasonableness of the decision of the Ecuadorian courts to  
 22 do the same and place that decision comfortably within the  
 23 ambit of the juridically possible.  
 24 Similar evidence supports Ecuador's Court's  
 25 decision to disregard the corporate separateness between



05:06 1 Texaco and TexPet. I just spoke of Texaco and Chevron.  
 2 Now, I'm going to address the evidence justifying the  
 3 piercing of the corporate veils between Texaco and TexPet.  
 4 And the Lago Agrio Record shows that, first,  
 5 Texaco considered TexPet as its Ecuadorian division, not a  
 6 separate entity. Routine administration matters such as  
 7 tenders for catering, cleaning, and entertainment services  
 8 were handled and authorized by Texaco. The Court made the  
 9 same observation with respect to daily operations such as  
 10 contracting equipment and personnel.  
 11 And just as the case of Chevron and Texaco,  
 12 TexPet and Texaco also had overlapping officers and  
 13 Directors. As a trial court noted, "Both the important  
 14 decisions as well as the trivial ones passed through  
 15 various levels of Executives and decision-making bodies of  
 16 Texaco, Inc., to the extent that the subsidiary depended  
 17 on the parent company to contract a simple catering  
 18 service."  
 19 Again, these factors are substantially similar to  
 20 those upon which U.S. courts concluded that Texaco was  
 21 Chevron's alter ego. Claimants cannot indict the  
 22 Ecuadorian Court's Decision to disregard TexPet's and  
 23 Texaco's corporate separateness as egregious or offensive  
 24 to the most basic sense of justice without simultaneously  
 25 indicting the wrong judicial system.

05:07 1 Claimants' extra petita damages are equally  
 2 without basis, and I will not address them in the interest  
 3 of time. Claimants' other allegations of legal error are  
 4 similarly without basis in law or in fact. For example,  
 5 Claimants complained that the Courts in Ecuador  
 6 retroactively applied the EMA. The contention is  
 7 predicated on the premise that the EMA Article 43 created  
 8 new substantive rights concerning the diffuse claims. The  
 9 plain language of Article 43 shows this premise to be  
 10 false and reiterated decisions of Ecuador's highest court  
 11 confirm the procedural nature of this relation.  
 12 As the National Court explained, the Civil Code  
 13 determines the substantive rights underpinning the  
 14 Plaintiffs' claims, and Article 43 establishes the  
 15 applicable procedure.  
 16 Claimants' next contention that the Court  
 17 improperly allowed Plaintiffs' claims under tort  
 18 provisions of the Civil Code to be heard in oral summary  
 19 proceedings is also belied by the express mandate  
 20 contained in Article 43, that all claims in tort for  
 21 damages originating in environmental contamination be  
 22 heard in oral summary proceedings. Lest there be any  
 23 doubt, the Republic and its Expert presented evidence of  
 24 other decisions that confronted and rejected substantially  
 25 the same argument that Claimants advanced in these

05:09 1 proceedings. This shows that Claimants are not the only  
 2 ones to have made this argument, but also shows that the  
 3 same argument has been rejected every time that it has  
 4 been raised.  
 5 Moving on, Claimants' claims of due-process  
 6 violations fare no better. There are complaints about the  
 7 Plaintiffs' withdrawal of their earlier request for a  
 8 certain number of judicial inspections or the allegedly  
 9 improper procedure for appointing Cabrera as a global  
 10 expert, and the Court's handling of Chevron's repetitive  
 11 essential error petitions are fabrications only  
 12 facilitated by Claimants' Experts' willingness to  
 13 misrepresent applicable rules of civil procedure and the  
 14 relevant facts. I expect that Claimants will address the  
 15 minutiae of each of these allegations during their  
 16 examination of Dr. Andrade, and, therefore, intend to  
 17 expand on these issues when I address the Tribunal again a  
 18 few weeks from today in Closing Argument.  
 19 This concludes this segment of my original  
 20 submission. With your permission, I would like to devote  
 21 some time now to address Mr. Coriell's presentation of  
 22 this morning on Track 1 issues.  
 23 And I will also take the opportunity to touch  
 24 upon certain aspects of the Tribunal's recent decisions on  
 25 those issues.

05:10 1 While the Republic appreciates, really  
 2 appreciates, the hard work of this Tribunal and, of  
 3 course, the result of that analysis, we remain concerned  
 4 about the direction that the Tribunal appears to be taking  
 5 in respect of the nature of the Claims at issue in the  
 6 Lago Agrio Litigation. We have always been candid with  
 7 this Tribunal and intend to continue that practice for the  
 8 duration of these proceedings and beyond. We recognize  
 9 the challenges inherent to the task of interpreting the  
 10 laws of a legal system that is foreign to the majority of  
 11 this Tribunal, and it is with candor that I tell you that  
 12 we do recognize this Tribunal's discernible efforts to  
 13 understand these issues and to find the path to the  
 14 correct answer to the questions before it.  
 15 But Claimants have succeeded in creating a legal  
 16 fiction by importing into a civil law system legal  
 17 constructs developed in common law and which really have  
 18 no place of recognition in Ecuador's legal system.  
 19 Claimants have spent enormous resources to square a  
 20 circle, and in the process have made this Tribunal's task  
 21 a daunting one. The Republic continues to regret that in  
 22 its final and First Partial Award, the Tribunal took a  
 23 stab at interpreting some aspects of Ecuadorian law and  
 24 came out on the opposite extreme of what Courts in Ecuador  
 25 have established on those same issues.

05:12 1 Certain aspects of the Tribunal's recent decision  
 2 on Track 1 raised concerns that the Tribunal may continue  
 3 to misunderstand relevant aspects of Ecuador's legal  
 4 system, which may lead in turn to critical decisions that  
 5 may not have a sound basis in Ecuadorian law.  
 6 For example, in its most recent decision, the  
 7 Tribunal adopted definitions of what it considers to be  
 8 individual claims and diffuse claims to, "denote  
 9 categories of Claims that the Tribunal has identified as  
 10 relevant to its legal analysis of the Parties' respective  
 11 cases in this decision." This language appears at  
 12 Paragraph 157 of the decision.  
 13 At Paragraph 156, the Tribunal adopts the  
 14 following definition of a diffuse claim, and I quote:  
 15 "Under Ecuadorian law, a diffuse claim may belong to a  
 16 community of indeterminate people with the remedy  
 17 indivisible, and it is not an individual claim." But,  
 18 Mr. President, with utmost respect, I wonder what might be  
 19 the source of this definition. This definition is  
 20 prefaced by the phrase "under Ecuadorian law," but there  
 21 is no statute on the record or elsewhere, really, that  
 22 might contain any of the elements of this definition.  
 23 There is no precedent in the history of Ecuador's  
 24 jurisprudence from which one could derive those elements,  
 25 nor is there academic support for it.

05:13 1 Mr. President, this definition simply does not  
 2 comport with Ecuadorian law. This is not Ecuadorian law.  
 3 And allow me to illustrate the danger of having  
 4 to create definitions to accommodate Claimants' legal  
 5 arguments. At Paragraph 164 of the Decision, you identify  
 6 certain claims raised in the Lago Agrio Complaint that,  
 7 under the proposed definition of individual and diffuse  
 8 claims, "could be read as including something other than  
 9 individual claims." And you list there the popular action  
 10 under Article 2236 of the Civil Code. You will recall  
 11 that the National Court confirmed in its decision that  
 12 Article 2236 of the Civil Code is one of the primary bases  
 13 for relief, the relief sought in the complaint and granted  
 14 in the Judgment, and I will turn to that in a few minutes.  
 15 Under the Tribunal's proposed definition of  
 16 diffuse claims, Claimants would argue that any claim under  
 17 this provision, Article 2236, by a member of an  
 18 indeterminate class would necessarily be a diffuse one;  
 19 that is, that it would not be an individual claim.  
 20 The jurists of ancient Rome who gave birth to  
 21 this popular action would respectfully beg to differ.  
 22 Think of the Year 1861, 19th century, when the drafters of  
 23 Ecuador's Civil Code adopted the same popular action as  
 24 well as the one we find in Article 990 of the same code.  
 25 There was no concept of diffuse rights back then. The

05:15 1 legal community began developing the notion of diffuse  
 2 rights more than a century and a half later. How could  
 3 one assert that Article 2236 was nonetheless enacted as a  
 4 mechanism to assert only diffuse claims? Note that the  
 5 Civil Code lays out the rights of the individuals and that  
 6 individuals have been afforded standing to file a popular  
 7 action under this provision for more than 150 years. Any  
 8 determination that these provisions falls within the  
 9 Tribunal's definition of a diffuse claims or in other  
 10 words that it is not an individual claim would be an  
 11 error.  
 12 But I submit to you that the real issue is not  
 13 whether an action under Article 2236 is a diffuse one.  
 14 Bear with me here. That is not the point. The real issue  
 15 is whether an individual's right to bring a popular action  
 16 under this provision falls within the scope of the Release  
 17 contained in the 1995 Settlement Agreement. It is not,  
 18 and it could not, for a number of reasons.  
 19 To elaborate on this point, I would like to focus  
 20 on the nature and purpose of the popular action under  
 21 Article 2236. Let's call it a 2236 action. And to  
 22 understand this 2236 action, we must first take a step  
 23 back and revisit Ecuadorian tort law more generally.  
 24 Though you may recall that the three primary tort  
 25 provisions of the Civil Code are Articles 2214, 2229, and

05:17 1 2236. Articles 2214 and 2229 embodied the traditional  
 2 notions of tort law; that is, anyone who causes harm to  
 3 another is liable to that other person for such harm.  
 4 That's liability for discrete harm, harm that has already  
 5 occurred, giving rise to what we know as a cow claim.  
 6 Let's call that a 2214 action. To be clear, this action  
 7 represents what we know as a cow claim to which  
 8 Mr. Coriell referred to this morning as a claim for  
 9 individualized harm.  
 10 But tort law in Ecuador has two components.  
 11 While we have on the one hand these 2214 actions focusing  
 12 on harm that has already occurred, we also have on the  
 13 other hand actions in tort to prevent the occurrence of  
 14 prospective harm. Article 2236 embodies this latter form.  
 15 It is a tort mechanism afforded to individuals to pursue a  
 16 claim in tort to prevent the occurrence of harm by causing  
 17 or forcing the tortfeasor to remove that which creates the  
 18 risk of prospective harm. That action is pursued in the  
 19 form of these popular action, and this component of  
 20 Ecuadorian tort law is of critical importance to  
 21 understand the Lago Agrio Litigation. Claimants have done  
 22 their level best to conceal the second component and offer  
 23 a rigid binary approach. Either you have a class action  
 24 or you have a 2214 action. There is nothing in between.  
 25 And as everyone agrees, Ecuador does not have a class

05:18 1 action, but that contention is absolutely wrong. It's  
 2 incomplete. It ignores the popular action under  
 3 Article 2236 which, as we've stated several times, is akin  
 4 to a class action, but it's not a class action. There are  
 5 substantial differences.

6 Think of it this way: If existing contamination  
 7 of the environment has already caused the final injury to,  
 8 say, a thousand people, the affected residents have the  
 9 right to seek reparation from the tortfeasor under article  
 10 2214, as our cow claim. Now, if the contamination raises  
 11 also the specter of harm in the future, harm to their  
 12 lives, harm to their health, their property, any one of  
 13 those people affected by the threat of harm may assert a  
 14 popular action under Article 2236 to cause the tortfeasor  
 15 to remove the contamination that is creating a threat of  
 16 contingent harm. To what? To their individual rights to  
 17 their persons. This is not a cow claim. This is not a  
 18 claim for compensation of reparation of harm that has  
 19 already occurred. This is a claim to prevent that harm  
 20 from occurring to exactly the same rights, but it's  
 21 prospective in nature.

22 In both instances, the Plaintiffs would seek to  
 23 vindicate their individual rights, but it is to protect  
 24 their health, their family, their livestock, their  
 25 property. They're not seeking to vindicate any esoteric

05:20 1 kind of right to the environment or a right of the  
 2 environment to be clean from contamination. This is to  
 3 protect themselves.

4 Now, under Article 2236, anyone has standing to  
 5 bring this kind of action, unless the threat of harm  
 6 affects a finite or determinate universe of people, in  
 7 which case only a member of such class has standing to  
 8 bring such popular action. And you will recall that  
 9 Professor Douglas used the example of a person who lives  
 10 by the river, any stream of water. He's not the only one.  
 11 He has neighbors, there are many people. And upstream  
 12 there is a company, a plant that is about to start or has  
 13 already started dripping highly toxic material into that  
 14 water stream contaminating the water stream from which  
 15 these neighbors take water to drink, to bathe, to feed  
 16 their cattle. One of the members of that class decides to  
 17 file a popular action under Article 2236 to force that  
 18 plant to remedy the problem, to prevent that toxic  
 19 materials from keeping dripping into the water.

20 But if that person does the same thing that the  
 21 Lago Agrio Plaintiffs did, that person will also invoke  
 22 Article 2214 to force that person to remediate the harm  
 23 that has already occurred.

24 So, for the action under 2236 is intended to  
 25 prevent that plant from continuing the pollution of the

05:22 1 waters. Now, this is only one neighbor that files the  
 2 claim, and that neighbor does have standing under the  
 3 plain language of Article 2236.

4 Now, because it's a popular action, that neighbor  
 5 is, in a sense, acting on behalf of the entire community  
 6 of neighbors, but there is a distinction to be made. That  
 7 person is not asserting their own--the neighbors'  
 8 individual rights to property or to life or to health.  
 9 This is a procedural right. This is a right to file a  
 10 popular action, to have the plant remove that which is  
 11 causing a threat of harm. This toxic waste will result in  
 12 sickness and death and in problems to the property of all  
 13 these neighbors.

14 Now, if this person succeeds, the benefit of this  
 15 action, the reparation will benefit himself, but by  
 16 definition will also benefit the entire members of the  
 17 class. This person settles a claim in exchange for an all  
 18 expenses paid vacation to Disney World, then anyone else,  
 19 all the neighbors continue to be exposed to a threat of  
 20 harm, and everyone has standing to file this claim.

21 This is the nature, the basic nature, of an  
 22 action, a popular action, under 2236 of the Civil Code.  
 23 Now, this right of action is a civil right. This is not  
 24 the government's right, so even if a governmental entity  
 25 could also assert claims under this provision, what is

05:23 1 clear is that there is no authority for the proposition  
 2 that the Government can or could ever dispose of any  
 3 person's right under that provision by way of a  
 4 settlement. You may recall that the Civil Code explicitly  
 5 forecloses any possibility that a party may settle rights  
 6 belonging to others. You may also recall that  
 7 Articles--well, these Articles on the screen,  
 8 Articles 2349 and 2354 embodied this notion.

9 So, no matter how you qualify an action under  
 10 2236, be it individuals or diffuse or otherwise, what is  
 11 important is that neither Petroecuador nor the Ministry of  
 12 Energy of Ecuador could have settled claims that any  
 13 person in Ecuador has a right to pursue under Article 2236  
 14 since the enactment of a Civil Code in 1861, and we know  
 15 that any attempt to do so would have rendered the  
 16 Agreement null and void by virtue of these provisions that  
 17 you have in front of you. Such right of action under  
 18 Article 2236 is not within the scope of the 1995  
 19 Settlement Agreement.

20 You may also recall that, up until recently  
 21 before this arbitration called for a need to veer off-road  
 22 and speak from the other side of the mouth, Claimants'  
 23 Experts admitted and represented to a Federal Court in New  
 24 York that claims brought under Article 2236 would not be  
 25 barred by the 1995 Settlement Agreement. Indeed, not one,

05:25 1 not two or three, but five of Claimants' Experts testified  
2 under oath to that effect. You must be familiar with the  
3 statement on the screen. I will not read the whole of it,  
4 but the conclusion you see is: "Therefore, the  
5 possibility of bringing those claims is not affected by  
6 the 1995 Settlement Agreement."

7 Mr. Reis Veiga, Texaco's lead negotiator of the  
8 1995 Settlement Agreement, he, too, admitted in  
9 cross-examination that he agreed with this statement. He  
10 had made the same representations to the inhabitants of  
11 the former Concession Area on multiple occasions prior to  
12 the formal execution of the Settlement Agreement.

13 As interpreted by this Tribunal, the Release does  
14 not extend to, "claims made by third persons acting  
15 independently of the Respondent and asserting rights  
16 separate and different from the rights of the Respondent."  
17 This is at Page 81 of the Tribunal's First Partial Award.

18 At Page 112, the Tribunal clarifies further that  
19 the Release precludes only, "diffuse claims against  
20 Chevron under Article 19.2 of the Constitution made by the  
21 Respondent"--that's clear--"and also by any individual not  
22 claiming personal harm actual or threatened." I submit to  
23 you that this action, the right of action under  
24 Article 2236 is no doubt a mechanism to assert rights,  
25 "separate and apart or different from the rights of the

05:26 1 Respondent."

2 Mr. President, Members of the Tribunal, it is  
3 with the most respect that I urge you to resist the  
4 temptation of revisiting these issues de novo. The Lago  
5 Agrio Court, the Court of Appeals in Ecuador's highest  
6 court all rejected as baseless Claimants' contention that  
7 the Claims at issue in the Lago Agrio Litigation had been  
8 settled by Petroecuador and the Government under the 1995  
9 Settlement Agreement. There are powerful reasons why  
10 those who preceded us in development of international law  
11 uniformly rejected the possibility that international  
12 tribunals substitute their Judgment for that of municipal  
13 courts interpreting their own municipal laws. The  
14 likelihood of error is chief among them.

15 The same broad equitable relief that Plaintiffs  
16 requested in Aguinda was requested in the Lago Agrio  
17 Complaint and granted by the Lago Agrio Court under  
18 Articles 2236 of the Civil Code and EMA Article 43. One  
19 might read the Tribunal's characterization of the Aguinda  
20 claim as one limited to cow claims based on the most  
21 recent decision. I do not believe that that would  
22 possibly be the case, but in the interest of caution, I  
23 will respectfully refer the Tribunal to the Republic's  
24 submission describing the nature, scope, and extent of the  
25 Aguinda Complaint as seeking extensive remediation of the

05:28 1 environment in a former Concession Area.

2 The slide on the screen has a reference to each  
3 one, each opportunity where the Republic addressed this  
4 issue.

5 But I do wish to address Mr. Coriell's reliance  
6 on the Republic's statement explaining that the Aguinda  
7 Plaintiffs dropped their personal injury claims. And,  
8 indeed, they did. There is no inconsistency in the  
9 Republic's case here. We stand by that statement, but  
10 also need to make clear that those personal-injury claims  
11 refer to their cow claims, their claims for reparation or  
12 compensation for their individualized harm. Discrete,  
13 past harm. Mr. Coriell emphasized the fact that  
14 Plaintiffs did not offer evidence of personalized harm in  
15 Lago Agrio, nor did they seek compensation for any  
16 personalized harm suffered. That would be a 2214 type of  
17 action.

18 And Mr. Coriell is correct: The Lago Agrio  
19 Litigation is not a 2214 type of case. You may have  
20 noticed that no money will ever flow to the pockets of the  
21 Plaintiffs. Rather, all funds have been ordered to flow  
22 into a trust fund which sole purpose is to fund the  
23 remedial works necessary to remove the contamination that  
24 is posing raising a threat of harm to which each of the  
25 Plaintiffs is exposed.

05:30 1 The Lago Agrio Litigation is a 2236-type case.

2 It's a case about the removal of that which is causing a  
3 threat of harm to the inhabitants of the former Concession  
4 Area. This popular action entitles anyone in that area to  
5 assert this popular action precisely for the purpose of  
6 obtaining the removal of the threat.

7 I also wish to address Mr. Coriell's reliance on  
8 the Aguinda Decision. Mr. Coriell argued this morning  
9 that Ecuador relies on the Delfina Decision as its last  
10 resort, but this is an error. Claimants misread the  
11 Decision and misrepresent the relevance to its case, to  
12 this case.

13 To be clear, the Republic invoked Delfina for a  
14 limited purpose: To show that Claimants' contention that,  
15 in 1995, no individual could assert a claim under  
16 Article 19.2 was false. Delfina, one of the legal bases  
17 for Delfina is 19.2, and that's the reason why the  
18 Republic initially brought the Tribunal's attention to  
19 that case.

20 In its Track 1 Decision the Tribunal somewhat  
21 rendered--or rendered this decision somewhat irrelevant by  
22 carving out from its decision the right of an individual  
23 to file a claim under 19.2 to the extent that the Claimant  
24 asserted or alleged personal harm. That's exactly what  
25 happened in Delfina. We can no longer rely on Delfina.

05:31 1 That the relevance of that case is relative at best.  
 2 Now, Delfina was a 2214 type of claim. It was  
 3 not a 2236 action. It wasn't a class action. It was not  
 4 a diffuse claim. It was a 2214 type of claim. And your  
 5 recent decision reflects your understanding of that fact.  
 6 Delfina sought compensation for individualized injuries  
 7 and sought monetary compensation for those injuries,  
 8 although at the end of the day, it chose to apply those  
 9 funds to Public Works instead of putting it in their own  
 10 pockets.  
 11 Now, we also drew a parallel between Delfina and  
 12 Lago Agrio simply because the factual predicate of both  
 13 cases was very similar. There was environmental  
 14 contamination affecting the neighbors of a particular  
 15 area. In one case, Delfina, 2214-type action, the  
 16 neighbors chose to pursue or seek remediation, reparation  
 17 for the harm, historical harm, that had already occurred.  
 18 Monetary compensation for that harm. In Lago Agrio, the  
 19 existence of environmental contamination is a factual  
 20 predicate for a 2236 action. That environmental  
 21 contamination poses the threat of multiple different kinds  
 22 of harm, and my colleagues will address that in a few  
 23 minutes.  
 24 In essence, it establishes a factual predicate  
 25 for that claim, and the claim seeks an order from the

05:33 1 Court instructing the tortfeasor to remove that threat of  
 2 harm, in this case by way of environmental remediation.  
 3 Mr. President, this concludes my submission to  
 4 this issue. I have already exceeded the time that I had  
 5 allotted for this. We will have an opportunity to address  
 6 this matter in closing again, but given the possibility of  
 7 confusion, it is also very possible that Post-Hearing  
 8 Memorials may be warranted in this case. I'm sure that we  
 9 will have ample time to discuss that. So, with that, I  
 10 will turn the floor to my colleagues, Greg Ewing and  
 11 Nicole Silver.  
 12 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you.  
 13 MR. EWING: Good afternoon, Members of the  
 14 Tribunal.  
 15 When I started working on this case,  
 16 environmental issues were a bit of a mystery. As a human  
 17 being it was obvious to me why the people of Ecuador would  
 18 not want oil in their backyards and in their water. But  
 19 at the same time I read the reports written by Mr. Connor,  
 20 Dr. Hinchee and the rest of the Claimants' team and I  
 21 thought I must be missing something.  
 22 As we heard this morning there was and is no  
 23 problem in the Ecuadorian Oriente as a result of TexPet's  
 24 oil operations from 1972 to 1992. So, as any good lawyer  
 25 does, I dove into the details to figure out the truth. I

05:34 1 I would like to take about 15 minutes to 20 minutes this  
 2 afternoon to talk you through some of what we have found.  
 3 Put most simply, our analysis of the Lago Agria  
 4 record and our own experts' sampling has shown a very  
 5 straightforward truth. TexPet caused environmental  
 6 contamination that continues to exist in the Oriente and  
 7 negatively impacts its residents. I will be primarily  
 8 discussing the first two pieces of this conclusion, and my  
 9 colleague, Nicole Silver, will be discussing the third.  
 10 In the third week of this arbitration, you will  
 11 also hear from the Republic's Experts Dr. Ed Garvey and  
 12 Mr. Ken Goldstein of LBG and Dr. Harlee Strauss on these  
 13 same topics.  
 14 But to start, I would like to take you back to  
 15 the beginning of TexPet's time in Ecuador. When Texaco  
 16 entered the Oriente in the late 1960s, the area was mostly  
 17 untouched rainforest. Lago Agrio 1 was the first well  
 18 drilled by TexPet. Marketable quantities of oil were  
 19 found. Immediately after completing this well, TexPet  
 20 moved to drill Lago Agrio 2. Lago Agrio 2 is a well that  
 21 the Republic's Experts have done some analysis on, and a  
 22 well which we will be showing you during the site visit.  
 23 So it will serve as my first example. But I want to make  
 24 sure we don't get lost in my examples. TexPet operated at  
 25 least 344 sites throughout the Concession. My examples

05:36 1 today are just that: Examples. We have found similar  
 2 conditions at almost every site we visited. The judicial  
 3 inspections during the trial show the same. This is not  
 4 surprising, though, since TexPet's practices were the same  
 5 throughout the Concession. All of the examples I will be  
 6 showing you today are the direct result of TexPet's  
 7 practices. Keeping that in mind, let's look back at my  
 8 example.  
 9 This is an aerial view of Lago Agrio 2 in 1976,  
 10 the earliest date on which we have a clear picture of the  
 11 well. There are two pits here. You may be having a hard  
 12 time seeing them, and you may be thinking this is a lot  
 13 like those "Where's Wally" games or, as they're called  
 14 here in the States, "Where's Waldo?" Searching for pits  
 15 brings us to two of my first points.  
 16 First, TexPet did not keep records of at least  
 17 five main facts about each well site. The number of pits  
 18 dug, the location and dimensions of those pits, what they  
 19 put in those earthen pits, how and when those earthen pits  
 20 were closed, spills that escaped public attention. This  
 21 poor recordkeeping forces all of us to attempt to piece  
 22 together the history of each and every one of these sites.  
 23 For instance, we know where many pits are from the aerial  
 24 photographs, but there are surely many more still hidden.  
 25 The second point is that piecing together the

05:37 1 history of these sites is a significant effort that  
 2 requires looking at many different pieces of evidence.  
 3 The Parties in the Lago Agrio Litigation recognized this,  
 4 and presented the Court with aerial photographs like this  
 5 one, witness accounts, historical documents and over 100  
 6 Expert Reports interpreting it all.  
 7 And on top of that, the Lago Agrio Court visited  
 8 over 50 of these sites to see them firsthand. Looking  
 9 back at the aerial photo of Lago Agrio 2 in 1976, we first  
 10 identify the platform. I've outlined it for easy viewing.  
 11 And I'll tell you, Chevron's internal documents took some  
 12 of the fun out of this "where is the pit" game by telling  
 13 us where Chevron thinks the pits are. So, I have cheated  
 14 and highlighted them for you. One is immediately  
 15 northwest of the platform. This pit was the focus of  
 16 LBG's investigation of Lago Agrio 2 in 2013 and 2014, and  
 17 it's one pit that we know is still causing problems for  
 18 the residents and continues to threaten them with future  
 19 problems.  
 20 The second pit that you can see further to the  
 21 north of Lago Agrio 2 is most likely a test pit. Test  
 22 pits were used by TexPet to test the output of a newly  
 23 drilled well, hence the name.  
 24 We know very little about this smaller pit at  
 25 Lago Agrio 2 because Chevron has ignored it in all of its

05:39 1 investigations, probably because, as LBG found too, it is  
 2 now difficult to get to.  
 3 So, I will shift our focus to Shushufindi 34,  
 4 another site which LBG investigated and another site which  
 5 we will show you during the site visit to give you a  
 6 clearer view of a test pit.  
 7 At this site, you can see the platform and one  
 8 large pit immediately to the east of the platform. This  
 9 unlined earthen pit called a cuttings pit or a reserve pit  
 10 was most likely where TexPet dumped the dirt and rock from  
 11 drilling. But when the drill hit oil, that oil filled  
 12 this pit. And that is most likely why this pit is  
 13 midnight black in these photos. I want to direct your  
 14 attention to the smaller pit to the north. This is the  
 15 formerly hidden pit that LBG found in 2014 during its  
 16 investigation of the site. This is most likely a test pit  
 17 that TexPet used to test the wells' oil production volume.  
 18 According to an internal TexPet memorandum, as soon as a  
 19 well was drilled, TexPet would dig a small deep slush pit  
 20 for well tests, like this one we were just showing you.  
 21 They would then connect the newly drilled well to a pipe  
 22 that emptied in this pit. TexPet would then open up the  
 23 valves for a period of time and let the oil flow into this  
 24 test pit. The engineers would measure how much oil came  
 25 out during this time period and could then calculate the

05:40 1 well's flow rate. Once the test was done, according to  
 2 the memo, these pits were filled in and the location  
 3 graded over.  
 4 As you can see from this one test data drilling  
 5 report from Lago Agrio 16, TexPet engineers opened the  
 6 well to flow into a test pit for 12 hours and during that  
 7 time 300 barrels of oil, which equates to over  
 8 47,000 liters of crude oil, went into a pit that was then  
 9 simply covered with dirt.  
 10 But how do we know that TexPet just left this oil  
 11 in the pits? Well, in 1996, when Woodward-Clyde came to  
 12 the Oriente as part of the RAP, they pumped over 34,000  
 13 barrels of liquid oil out of the pits they remediated.  
 14 We also know TexPet left oil in their pits  
 15 because we can still see liquid crude in and around pits  
 16 like those at Shushufindi 34, and when we sample in and  
 17 around other pits throughout the Concession.  
 18 I've now walked through how bad the pits  
 19 themselves are, were and are in the Oriente, but I would  
 20 like to walk through something that is probably much  
 21 worse. These pits did not actually contain the oil that  
 22 TexPet put into them. TexPet constructed their platforms  
 23 on high ground with the pits generally downhill. Then  
 24 many times the pit walls collapsed releasing the oil to  
 25 the surrounding environment. In other cases, the oil

05:42 1 would simply flow over the top of the pits' walls. As one  
 2 example of this, at Aguatico 2, a site operated by TexPet  
 3 only, there was a pit that was filled with oil and water.  
 4 Obviously, we're in the rainforest so, it rains a lot.  
 5 And when it rains, that rain fills the pit. But let me  
 6 let Mr. Connor explain.  
 7 (Video played.)  
 8 MR. EWING: From what we have seen, this was not  
 9 an uncommon event. In addition to overtopping the pits'  
 10 walls, oil contamination leaked out of the pits through the  
 11 ground. The contaminated water and crude mixture then  
 12 flowed into nearby wetlands and streams.  
 13 To see an example of this, I will turn to  
 14 Aguatico 6. You can see in the aerial image the large  
 15 amount of rainforest that was cleared to prepare this  
 16 site. According to Chevron, there are at least seven pits  
 17 here. In 1993, when environmental auditors came to  
 18 inspect Aguatico 6, they found that these pits had seeped  
 19 and had contaminated the wetland. LBG went to Aguatico 6  
 20 in 2014 and found that the problem is still there, and  
 21 that it is huge. We will show you this site during the  
 22 site visit.  
 23 All of what I have told you has brought us to the  
 24 first conclusion we have drawn from analyzing the data in  
 25 the Lago Agrio Litigation and LBG's more recent

05:44 1 investigations. TexPet caused contamination in the  
 2 Oriente that continues to exist in the Oriente and  
 3 negatively impacts its residents.  
 4 Let me quickly address some of Claimants' main  
 5 responses to what I have just shown you. This morning,  
 6 Claimants relied on statements by David Russell and  
 7 Douglas Beltman, supposedly proving there is no  
 8 contamination in the Oriente, and refer to Slide 149 and  
 9 153.  
 10 First, we have responded to these exact e-mails  
 11 and statements numerous times in our Memorials, but  
 12 Claimants have not yet responded to them and still do not  
 13 address any of our arguments today.  
 14 Second, the first two of Russell's e-mails which  
 15 Claimants cite, come either 1) before the labs had  
 16 completed a single JI report, or 2) after only four of the  
 17 54 had been completed, and the third was a part of  
 18 Russell's cease and desist letter when relations had  
 19 already deteriorated. Moreover, these general e-mails are  
 20 directly contradicted by e-mails addressing their actual  
 21 preliminary findings. For instance, in October 2004,  
 22 Russell says, and I quote: "The bottom line is, that even  
 23 by conservative standards, we are finding PAH  
 24 concentrations in the soils as much as 200 times  
 25 permissible exposure limits." And that's R-1303.

05:45 1 And, third, Claimants rely on Douglas Beltman's  
 2 statement disavowing his work on Cabrera to show that  
 3 there is no contamination in the Oriente anywhere. Not  
 4 only is this larger conclusion not in Beltman's statement,  
 5 but Beltman testified that Chevron drafted that  
 6 declaration, and he was forced to sign it.  
 7 To give just two citations, please see the  
 8 Respondent's Track 2 Supplemental Counter-Memorial from  
 9 November 7th, 2014, at Paragraphs 471 to 474, or  
 10 Respondent's Track 2 Rejoinder at Paragraphs 62 to 63, and  
 11 the attached Annex A.  
 12 But Claimants also look at all of what I have  
 13 just said and say, but oil in the environment weathers,  
 14 what Claimants describe as turning to asphalt over a  
 15 period of months. So, if this oil is still liquid now, it  
 16 must not be TexPet's oil. To be clear, we do not disagree  
 17 that oil exposed to air, nutrients, bacteria will weather  
 18 and slowly turn to a more solid state. As these pictures  
 19 show, we will see some of this weathered oil at  
 20 Aguarico 6, for instance. But if the oil is not exposed  
 21 to air and nutrients, weathering is largely arrested, and  
 22 the oil will remain as it came out of the ground, a  
 23 liquid. Dr. Short, the Respondent's petroleum chemistry  
 24 Expert, testified to this, but Claimants chose not to call  
 25 him, and how do we know that TexPet oil is not exposed to

05:47 1 air or nutrients? Well, we found buried pits. When we  
 2 look at aerial imagery of a site like Shushufindi 34, for  
 3 instance, we can see the pit we were discussing earlier is  
 4 there in 1976 and then it is covered over in 1985. And  
 5 when LBG found the pit in 2014, it was still covered over.  
 6 Again, this is a common sequence of events.  
 7 During LBG's investigation in 2013 and 2014, they  
 8 found liquid crude oil in the pit areas and in the  
 9 groundwater monitoring wells they installed around the  
 10 pits. Covering a pit like we saw at Shushufindi 34 is a  
 11 very effective way to remove oxygen, and without oxygen,  
 12 weathering all but stops. This is exactly what Dr. Short  
 13 found. What Claimants want you to do is to look at one  
 14 data point, oil that all of the Parties are finding is  
 15 liquid, and then blindly conclude that since it is liquid,  
 16 it must be recent. But that conclusion just does not  
 17 comport with the facts.  
 18 There is a lot more evidence that demonstrates  
 19 that TexPet's contamination continues to exist in the  
 20 Oriente, and that it negatively impacts its residents, but  
 21 I want to move on to my next point:  
 22 Chevron knows this contamination exists and  
 23 actively sought to hide and minimize that fact from the  
 24 Lago Agrio Court and now from you.  
 25 First, you have read extensively about the

05:49 1 pre-inspections in our Memorials, a pre-inspection in and  
 2 of itself is not necessarily a bad thing. We are  
 3 obviously conducting them before this Tribunal's site  
 4 visit. What makes Chevron's pre-inspections bad is that  
 5 they were secret, unauthorized, and used to skew the  
 6 results presented to the Lago Agrio Court. In their  
 7 pre-inspections, Chevron sent their Experts out to the  
 8 well sites to find where contamination was so that they  
 9 could avoid it during the actual judicial inspections. We  
 10 now know much more about these pre-inspections and how  
 11 Chevron used them, but getting this information was not  
 12 easy. It required filing numerous 1782 discovery  
 13 proceedings, and Chevron resisted them at every turn, but  
 14 piece by piece the truth has come out. Based on these  
 15 1782s, we can look in on some of these interactions  
 16 because some were caught on tape. In this video that I'm  
 17 about to show you, Rene Bernier, a Chevron representative,  
 18 is looking at sample cores taken near Shushufindi 21.  
 19 There are a couple of key points I would like you to  
 20 notice.  
 21 First, Chevron was out trying to find clean  
 22 locations;  
 23 Two, contamination had spread further than they  
 24 expected;  
 25 And, three, the contamination they found was at

05:50 1 depth. It wasn't on the surface.  
 2 (Video played.)  
 3 MR. EWING: You will hear much more about these  
 4 PIs over the next three weeks, so I will leave it there and  
 5 move to my third point.  
 6 You by now are very familiar with the fact that  
 7 LBG investigated a few sites in 2013 and 2014, but I want  
 8 to start from the beginning of their involvement in this  
 9 case. We retained LBG in 2013 to analyze the data in the  
 10 Lago Agrio Court record. Chevron had made allegations  
 11 against the Lago Agrio Plaintiffs' data, so we asked LBG  
 12 to review only Chevron data to assess whether Chevron's  
 13 data alone was adequate to conclude that the Lago Agrio  
 14 Judgment was reasonable. Using only Chevron's data, LBG  
 15 came to numerous conclusions, but one is primary. The  
 16 Judgment's finding that contamination exists is  
 17 reasonable.  
 18 Now, Claimants said this morning during their  
 19 presentation on pollution in the Oriente that LBG's  
 20 conclusion was not adequate because it did not provide a  
 21 specific dollar value. But Claimants have never alleged  
 22 that the damages Award was just too high. They have  
 23 always said it should have been zero. The question is  
 24 whether the Judgment's damages were reasonable. LBG  
 25 answered that question. They are.

05:53 1 As part of understanding Chevron's data, LBG has  
 2 also come to a few more conclusions:  
 3 First, as I discussed a few minutes ago, Chevron  
 4 used the results from their PIs to avoid certain soil  
 5 sampling locations during the judicial inspections. LBG  
 6 found that Chevron at times sampled at different depths or  
 7 at different locations altogether when a pre-inspection  
 8 result came back contaminated. LBG analyzed Chevron's  
 9 pre-inspections and judicial inspections and found that  
 10 Chevron did not randomly select its judicial inspection  
 11 locations.  
 12 Second, LBG's Dr. Garvey will explain to you that  
 13 he took Chevron samples and calculated the amount of crude  
 14 oil in the soil in and around TexPet's former pits. Dr.  
 15 Garvey's calculation that there are approximately  
 16 3.4 million-barrels of crude oil, the equivalent of  
 17 540 million-liters, make the Oriente contamination  
 18 equivalent to six Exxon Valdez spills, or three quarters  
 19 of BP's Deepwater Horizon.  
 20 Now, Chevron takes issue with our  
 21 characterization of the Oriente environmental  
 22 contamination as unprecedented, and maybe they are right.  
 23 This much oil has been spilled before. The difference is,  
 24 BP and Exxon and similar others have paid billions of  
 25 dollars for their environmental damage. BP, for instance,

05:54 1 has set aside \$43 billion to remediate and settle  
 2 anticipated individual claims. Chevron wants you to  
 3 believe that the 40 million--that's million, not  
 4 40 billion that BP is paying--is adequate that it paid to  
 5 clean up a few sites in the 1990s should erase its  
 6 liability to all of the individuals harmed. That is  
 7 unprecedented.  
 8 Third, produced water is water that comes up with  
 9 oil from deep underground. The water is extremely salty  
 10 and contains emulsified oil and significant concentrations  
 11 of metals. From 1972 to 1992, TexPet admits to having  
 12 simply released this water through pits into the  
 13 environment. LBG estimated that TexPet released between  
 14 306,000 and 1.2 million-kilograms of oil.  
 15 Fourth, Chevron has admitted that it sought out  
 16 clean samples during the judicial inspections to delineate  
 17 the sites. We will talk more about the effectiveness and  
 18 meaning of Chevron's delineation strategy, but for now I  
 19 want to point out a corollary point. By loading the  
 20 record with known clean samples, Chevron skewed all of the  
 21 percentages so it can make claims like 100 percent of  
 22 groundwater samples are clean or 90 percent of samples are  
 23 below relevant thresholds. These claims make it sound  
 24 like the Concession Area must be clean. But they actually  
 25 only show that Chevron understands statistics and how to

05:56 1 skew them.  
 2 The real question isn't what the total samples  
 3 taken show. It is what do the samples show where  
 4 contamination is expected or, as Mr. Bernier alluded to in  
 5 the earlier video, what do the samples show from locations  
 6 where contamination wasn't expected, yet was still found.  
 7 Before I cede the floor, I want to discuss one  
 8 final topic that will lead you to the presentation  
 9 Ms. Silver will make next.  
 10 TexPet has caused contamination that continues to  
 11 exist in the Oriente. When I was at Lago Agrio 2 in 2014,  
 12 it had been raining for a few hours, typical for the  
 13 rainforest, and we found oily water dripping from the pipe  
 14 TexPet left in the side of the pit. As you will see when  
 15 you visit, this occurs directly above the stream and  
 16 marshland that is so highly contaminated. And here is the  
 17 problem, if it isn't obvious. The people who live at Lago  
 18 Agrio 2 come into contact with that contamination in that  
 19 stream and marshland on a daily basis.  
 20 Similarly, at Shushufindi 55, the cows drink out  
 21 of the contaminated stream.  
 22 At Lago Agrio 16, the people drink the water,  
 23 bathe in the water, wash their clothes in the water. As I  
 24 said at the beginning, these sites are just examples.  
 25 There are plenty more from LBG's reports, Chevron's



05:57 1 pre-inspections, the judicial inspections, and interviews  
 2 with local residents.  
 3 Having started with TexPet's historic operations,  
 4 having shown that contamination still exists, and now  
 5 having briefly discussed how people in the environment  
 6 continue to come into contact with TexPet's contamination,  
 7 I hand the floor to Ms. Silver to explain the health  
 8 effects this contamination causes.  
 9 MS. SILVER: You have just heard from my  
 10 colleague, Mr. Ewing, about how TexPet's practices  
 11 devastated the environment in the Oriente Region of  
 12 Ecuador, but TexPet has done more than harm the  
 13 environment. Its practices have put at risk tens of  
 14 thousands of people who continue even to this day to be  
 15 exposed to the toxic chemicals in the crude oil that TexPet  
 16 left behind. The health risks that the Oriente residents  
 17 face are real, and they are substantial.  
 18 Claimants seek to sanitize for the Tribunal the  
 19 risks of contamination, making this a battle between the  
 20 Experts, and Claimants' Experts would like you to believe  
 21 that the oil TexPet left in the soil, sediment and water  
 22 is harmless. It is not.  
 23 Despite what Claimants suggest, it is not the  
 24 same as the petroleum that can be found in products like  
 25 Hershey's Chocolate or Johnson's Baby Oil. There is not

05:59 1 one single person in this room who would spread crude oil  
 2 on a child as if it were baby oil. There is not one  
 3 person in this room who would eat a petroleum bar or drink  
 4 a glass of crude. Why not? Because contaminants in crude  
 5 are toxic and carcinogenic. The adverse effects from  
 6 exposure to crude oil are well documented, including by  
 7 the petroleum industry itself. Toxicology data as well as  
 8 occupational and epidemiology studies of people who have  
 9 been exposed to oil in similar settings, consistently  
 10 document increased risks of respiratory problems,  
 11 dermatitis, skin cancer, decreased immune function and  
 12 neurological problems. These ailments are, of course, the  
 13 same ones reflected in reports of Concession Area  
 14 residents who have been exposed to TexPet oil.  
 15 That crude oil is harmful to human health, should  
 16 not be a controversial statement. Yet in this  
 17 arbitration, Claimants have taken the position that crude  
 18 oil is not harmful to humans. Claimants' Expert,  
 19 Dr. Moolgavkar, has testified that no epidemiological  
 20 study has confirmed a causal link between petroleum and  
 21 cancer or other non-cancer causes of death. Perhaps  
 22 realizing that this is an untenable position, Claimants  
 23 have backpedaled some in their recent pleadings, claiming  
 24 that regardless of whether crude is toxic, the people  
 25 living in the Oriente are not currently exposed to oil or

06:01 1 at least not in quantities sufficient to cause them harm.  
 2 Claimants now argue that the Republic's Experts  
 3 rely on junk science because neither the Plaintiffs nor we  
 4 have shown that any particular individual has actually  
 5 been exposed to crude at a level high enough to cause  
 6 toxicological harm. And, indeed, Mr. Coriell is correct.  
 7 The Lago Agrio Case does not seek to address personal  
 8 injury claims or health harms specific to any one person.  
 9 But as you have heard from my colleague, Mr. Leonard,  
 10 individual in this context, in the context of Ecuadorian  
 11 law has to do with individual rights, not harms.  
 12 That the Judgment at times refers to public  
 13 health, does not mean that the rights at issue in the Lago  
 14 Agrio Case are diffuse ones or, indeed, that they are the  
 15 same as the diffuse rights that Claimants allege were  
 16 settled under the 1995 Settlement Agreement. Thus,  
 17 whether any particularized harm has been shown is not the  
 18 question before this Tribunal. Nor was it the question  
 19 before the Lago Agrio Court.  
 20 The Lago Agrio Court did not Award health-related  
 21 damages based on past or existing injury to any specific  
 22 person or persons. Instead, it recognized the obvious  
 23 risk to the Plaintiffs, and it was on this basis that the  
 24 Court granted an Award sufficient to pay for the medical  
 25 monitoring of those put at risk by exposure to TexPet's

06:02 1 contamination.  
 2 Therefore, the only questions we must ask here  
 3 are did TexPet expose the Oriente people to health risks?  
 4 Did the Ecuadorian Court reasonably find that TexPet's  
 5 contamination has resulted or could at some future point  
 6 pose an increased risk of harm to a maximally exposed  
 7 hypothetical person. The answer to these questions is, of  
 8 course, a resounding yes.  
 9 The Republic's Expert, Dr. Strauss, has performed  
 10 several risk assessments that show that cleanup is  
 11 required because people who have been or may at some  
 12 future point be exposed through a variety of pathways to  
 13 unsafe concentrations of chemicals in the sediment,  
 14 streams, groundwater and soil at specific locations in the  
 15 Oriente. The residents at these sites come into contact  
 16 with oil on a daily basis. They ingest contaminated water  
 17 when drinking and cooking and they repeatedly touch  
 18 contaminated water, sediment and soil when farming,  
 19 bathing, swimming, doing laundry, and playing.  
 20 Dr. Strauss' risk assessments show that exposure  
 21 at all of these sites is sufficient to result in increased  
 22 risks of adverse health effects both non-cancerous and  
 23 cancerous, requiring that further investigation and  
 24 cleanup be performed. Claimants dispute the usefulness of  
 25 Dr. Strauss' risk assessments, arguing that they do not

06:04 1 show that oil actually caused adverse health effects to  
 2 specific individuals. But to be clear, and however  
 3 Claimants wish to mischaracterize the purpose of her work,  
 4 Dr. Strauss' risk assessments were never conducted to  
 5 establish historical harm to any one person.  
 6 Dr. Strauss' task, instead, was forward-looking  
 7 to determine whether TexPet's contamination presently  
 8 results or could in the future result in health risks to  
 9 the people, risks sufficient to warrant the cleanup  
 10 ordered by the Judgment.  
 11 Due to time constraints and the vastness of the  
 12 area, Dr. Strauss could not conduct a comprehensive risk  
 13 assessment at all of the former TexPet sites in the  
 14 Concession Area. She did, however, investigate nine sites  
 15 at the former Concession Area and at every single one of  
 16 them she found elevated risks of cancer and non-cancer  
 17 health problems. There is no reason to believe that what  
 18 she found at these sites wouldn't be replicated at most  
 19 all of the 344 TexPet-operated sites spread across the  
 20 Consortium.  
 21 You will hear from Dr. Strauss later in these  
 22 proceedings, and she will explain what the purpose and  
 23 results of her human health risk assessments are.  
 24 Of course, Dr. Strauss is not the Republic's only  
 25 health Expert. Our other health Experts established that

06:05 1 a causal link to exposure to petroleum and cancer likely  
 2 exists in the Oriente. But Claimants have elected not to  
 3 question Dr. Laffon and Dr. Grandjean about their  
 4 findings. Their conclusions, therefore, stand  
 5 un-rebutted.  
 6 In her Expert Report, Dr. Laffon demonstrates  
 7 that exposure to oil leads to an increased risk of cancer.  
 8 Her earlier studies relating to the Prestige oil spill off  
 9 the coast of Spain, found that those who helped to clean  
 10 up the oil experienced significant damage to their DNA,  
 11 which in turn has been shown to increase a person's risk  
 12 of developing cancer. Crude oil contains many genotoxic  
 13 chemicals, chemicals that are capable of damaging a  
 14 person's genetic material or DNA. Studies have shown that  
 15 there is no permissible safe level of exposure to these  
 16 genotoxic chemicals. In other words, there is no amount  
 17 of exposure that does not entail some risk.  
 18 Dr. Laffon's Prestige studies, which were not  
 19 performed in connection with any litigation, showed  
 20 lasting damage to human DNA after only several months of  
 21 exposure. The DNA damage was still present two years  
 22 after exposure to the Prestige oil had ended but not  
 23 detectable after seven, though the subjects continued to  
 24 experience immunological alterations. Of course, unlike  
 25 the cleanup workers involved in the Prestige study, the

06:07 1 Oriente residents have been ingesting and touching  
 2 TexPet's oil on a daily basis for decades, and they are  
 3 still exposed to it today.  
 4 Claimants have also elected not to call the  
 5 Republic's epidemiologist. Dr. Grandjean has shown that  
 6 cancer deaths associated with exposure to TexPet's oil are  
 7 likely significantly underestimated in all of the studies  
 8 done to date. In his Expert Reports, Dr. Grandjean shows  
 9 that Dr. Moolgavkar's epidemiology study of cancer deaths  
 10 in the Oriente suffers from serious shortcomings and is  
 11 wholly uninformative.  
 12 Dr. Moolgavkar's study certainly does not prove  
 13 that there is no causal association between petroleum  
 14 exposure and cancer as even he has admitted in other  
 15 contexts. Dr. Grandjean explains that Dr. Moolgavkar  
 16 interpreted uncertainties in his own data to conclude that  
 17 exposure to petroleum in the Oriente did not cause cancer,  
 18 but gaps in data cannot be used to prove that no  
 19 association exists. Instead, such gaps typically mask or  
 20 underestimate health hazards. Absence of evidence is not  
 21 evidence of absence.  
 22 Moreover, the study design chosen by  
 23 Dr. Moolgavkar generated skewed data that minimized  
 24 findings of cancer mortality. For example, Dr. Moolgavkar  
 25 based his findings on death certificates but in the

06:08 1 Oriente, they are inherently unreliable and cannot be used  
 2 to show that there is no increased incidents of cancer  
 3 among the populations living in the oil-producing areas.  
 4 As a matter of practice in Ecuador, the cause of  
 5 death is not put on any death certificate unless it is  
 6 medically certified, and in the Oriente only about half  
 7 were prior to 2005.  
 8 Additionally, Dr. Moolgavkar's classification of  
 9 the exposed population is misleading because he  
 10 incorporates categories of people who have never been  
 11 exposed to TexPet's contamination. By including people  
 12 who live in cities removed from the contamination,  
 13 Dr. Moolgavkar, perhaps deliberately but definitely  
 14 systematically, dilutes the overall data and minimizes  
 15 findings of cancer mortality.  
 16 In conclusion, all of the Republic's health  
 17 experts agree that crude oil is a hazardous substance and  
 18 that exposure to it increases the risk of developing  
 19 serious health problems which require monitoring and  
 20 treatment. This should not be a controversial  
 21 proposition.  
 22 The Republic's experts' collective conclusion  
 23 supports the Judgment's findings. Proof of specific  
 24 causation or injury is not required to order remediation  
 25 or to set aside funds for medical monitoring and

06:10 1 treatment. The damages awarded for healthcare-related  
 2 costs did not compensate any one individual for the harm  
 3 she or he suffered. Rather, they recognize that the  
 4 people who have been and continue to be exposed to TexPet  
 5 oil are at risk of suffering adverse health consequences  
 6 including diseases as serious and fatal as cancer.  
 7 Impacts from exposure can be mitigated only through  
 8 monitoring, treatment, and remediation.  
 9 Nothing you have heard or will hear from  
 10 Claimants today or over the course of this Hearing can  
 11 show that the Judgment's Award for damages was  
 12 unreasonable. To be sure, Claimants are not simply  
 13 arguing that healthcare-related damages are too high.  
 14 On the contrary, according to Claimants, any  
 15 amount for damages for healthcare costs or excess cancer  
 16 would be excessive. In their world view, crude oil poses  
 17 no health risks at all, and not a single person living in  
 18 the Concession Area has been harmed or can suffer harm in  
 19 the future from exposure to oil.  
 20 But Claimants are gravely mistaken. The evidence  
 21 shows that those who have been exposed to oil will require  
 22 some form of treatment and monitoring of their health.  
 23 This is exactly what Dr. Laffon recommended be done after  
 24 the Prestige oil spill. And following the Deepwater  
 25 Horizon spill, BP set up a multi-billion dollar settlement

06:11 1 fund in part to compensate the many coastal residents and  
 2 clean-up workers who said they were made ill or were  
 3 injured as a result of exposure to oil. The Judgment  
 4 damages are no different.  
 5 Claimants are not comfortable talking about the  
 6 Oriente's indigenous population, but TexPet has put their  
 7 futures at risk. Although the Oriente residents are not  
 8 part of these proceedings, they are real people who  
 9 continue to face real danger from TexPet's contamination  
 10 absent remediation. During this proceeding we will show  
 11 that Claimants created this risk and that they should bear  
 12 the burden of mitigating it.  
 13 And with that, I turn the presentation back to  
 14 Mr. Bloom.  
 15 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you.  
 16 MR. BLOOM: So now we turn to the final part of  
 17 our presentation, the last 50 minutes or so, which  
 18 addresses Claimants' allegations of State corruption. As I  
 19 noted earlier, Claimants have over the years made a number  
 20 of allegations that they later dropped. In some instances,  
 21 when it has suited their purposes, they appear to leave  
 22 their allegations in for atmospherics but literally never  
 23 address the evidence that has been offered by the Republic.  
 24 The presentation this morning included many, many  
 25 allegations, and it appears that they are hoping something

06:13 1 will stick. Before we turn to the specific allegation of  
 2 ghostwriting, I want to clear out some of that underbrush,  
 3 some of the odds and ends of their allegations.  
 4 Specifically, let's take [audio disruption] the  
 5 case of Charles Calmbacher. Claimants' allegations in  
 6 short is that Steven Donziger changed his own Expert's  
 7 report at the last minute without his Expert's consent.  
 8 First, there is no allegation of State conduct.  
 9 Dr. Calmbacher is not a State actor. The Plaintiffs are  
 10 not State actors.  
 11 And even Claimants do not allege that the Lago  
 12 Agrio Court ever considered Dr. Calmbacher's report in  
 13 reaching its verdict. The Judgment is quite explicit on  
 14 this point, and it is on the screen. That should probably  
 15 end the discussion as it relates to Dr. Calmbacher, but  
 16 with your indulgence, I want to dwell on Claimants'  
 17 allegation for just a little bit longer because I think it  
 18 illustrates the point that we have repeatedly noted,  
 19 whereby Claimants begin with its conclusion and yet work  
 20 backwards.  
 21 It is, in fact, a common tactic, most especially,  
 22 I would say, in the case of prosecutors to seek out  
 23 possible witnesses who may be hostile to your adversary.  
 24 As the old adage goes, the enemy of my enemy is my friend,  
 25 even though he may be a little bit less than credible.

06:15 1 Here, Claimants solicited the services of Dr. Calmbacher  
 2 who was already embroiled in a heated dispute in  
 3 litigation with Mr. Donziger over non-payment, and in an  
 4 e-mail dated July 28th, 2005 to Steven Donziger,  
 5 Dr. Calmbacher threatened Donziger: "I have not been paid  
 6 for work," he said. "Please simply pay up. Don't start a  
 7 war. Wars have no rules, and people can suffer  
 8 irreparable, professional, psychological, and physical  
 9 damage as a result. You don't want that."  
 10 I was going to go on with a number of additional  
 11 slides as it relates to Calmbacher, but I will skip over  
 12 them in the interest of time. Suffice it to say, however,  
 13 that not only are Dr. Calmbacher's allegations not  
 14 corroborated, but his own contemporaneous e-mails  
 15 repeatedly contradict his sworn deposition testimony. I  
 16 will not, however, go through all of the examples now.  
 17 And, of course, Claimants have long relied on  
 18 their allegation that the Cabrera Report was drafted by  
 19 the Plaintiffs' paid experts. But in doing so, the  
 20 Claimants conflate the Plaintiffs with the Republic of  
 21 Ecuador, and I really want to be clear: We represent the  
 22 Republic of Ecuador. We do not represent Stephen  
 23 Donziger, and we do not represent the Plaintiffs.  
 24 It may be a strategically understandable tactic,  
 25 but it is also clearly error for them to conflate the

06:16 1 Plaintiffs with the Republic.  
 2 And first under Ecuadorian law, any fraudulent  
 3 activity on behalf of an expert can never be attributed to  
 4 the Court and, hence, the State, because court-appointed  
 5 experts are not public servants or agents of the Court.  
 6 This too has been briefed most recently in our  
 7 Supplemental Counter-Memorial at Pages 86 to 88 and our  
 8 Supplemental Rejoinder beginning at 113.  
 9 Second, even Judge Kaplan in his decision found  
 10 that the Lago Agrio Court was misled. It too was a  
 11 victim.  
 12 And then, three, it is up to the Court to accept  
 13 or reject the opinions expressed by any expert, including  
 14 a court-appointed expert. Where is the State conduct  
 15 where the Court itself expressly declines to rely on the  
 16 Cabrera Report? And the Claimants know this, which is the  
 17 reason why they scratch and claw and try to find some hook  
 18 and infer and intuit and try to find something in the  
 19 Judgment that they can say, ah-ha, this must come from  
 20 Mr. Cabrera's Report.  
 21 But, first, Claimants speculate--these are the  
 22 three grounds that the Claimants rely on. First, they  
 23 speculate that the theories or categories of damages  
 24 adopted by the Court must have come from the Cabrera  
 25 Report. Even Judge Kaplan rejected that contention,

06:18 1 noting that the Cabrera Report identified only seven  
 2 categories of damages, and he also found that it was much  
 3 more likely that the categories of damages would have come  
 4 from the Plaintiffs' alegato.  
 5 Second, Claimants contend that the Court  
 6 indirectly relied on Mr. Cabrera by relying on the  
 7 Plaintiffs' supplemental experts who themselves allegedly  
 8 relied on Cabrera, but as these experts have repeatedly  
 9 testified, they either did not rely on Cabrera at all or,  
 10 when they did, they independently verified the information  
 11 on which basis they were relying from Mr. Cabrera, and I  
 12 would refer you respectively to Track 2 Counter-Memorial  
 13 Appendix E at Paragraphs 60 to 62, and the testimony cited  
 14 therein. And for his part Judge Kaplan also rejected this  
 15 theory.  
 16 Finally, Claimants speculate that Judge--I'm  
 17 sorry, that Mr. Cabrera's Report is the only record source  
 18 to the Court's finding that 880 pits required remediation.  
 19 To be clear, Mr. Cabrera's Annex H-1 identified 916, not  
 20 880--916 pits. Claimants try to back into the 880 number  
 21 by adding and subtracting different categories, but that  
 22 takes their speculation to a new level. Even their  
 23 experts disagree as to how they got to the number and what  
 24 should be excluded and included, and I'll simply refer  
 25 this Tribunal to our Supplemental Counter-Memorial at

06:20 1 Track 2 at Pages 78 to 82.  
 2 What else have Claimants relied on? They now are  
 3 relying on, and I guess they have for some time, on  
 4 political statements made by Mr. Correa in which he offers  
 5 support and sympathy to the Plaintiffs. But where should  
 6 his sympathies lie? You may recall a year ago I offered  
 7 many statements of President Obama in sympathy with the  
 8 victims of the Gulf Oil spill. You may recall a number of  
 9 quotes where he says, "and BP will pay. And BP will pay."  
 10 Of course, there is sympathy to one's own citizens.  
 11 And I will add, in this case, Chevron has not  
 12 done much to make--to make people and make its own  
 13 supporters proud of the company. I refer you to the about  
 14 20-page introduction in our Supplemental Counter-Memorial  
 15 where we went through a number of acts by Chevron--and I'm  
 16 not passing Judgment on the company outside of the acts as  
 17 it related to this specific case, but you will recall  
 18 their purchase of Mr. Borja, its contractor. Mr. Borja  
 19 himself said that after he met with Chevron, that's when  
 20 he went back to Ecuador and did a fourth video.  
 21 There were pressure tactics employed by Chevron.  
 22 They quote to Mr. Beltman's Witness Statement. They don't  
 23 talk about the pressure brought on him or his testimony in  
 24 deposition in which he said that every paragraph of his  
 25 Witness Statement was edited by Chevron's lawyers. And

06:22 1 that was a condition of a settlement with Chevron.  
 2 You have the preliminary inspections where they  
 3 clearly were trying to hide evidence of contamination.  
 4 You have their failure to take any company responsibility  
 5 for facts. They have taken extreme positions, including  
 6 in this arbitration, as to the issues of contamination. I  
 7 would submit that they have not done themselves proud.  
 8 And there are also institutional and personal  
 9 factors when you look at the real world and Mr. Correa's  
 10 comments. He's responding to a very aggressive public  
 11 relations campaign that has gone on for years, much of it  
 12 personally directed to him. When you attack someone, he  
 13 will respond.  
 14 And Claimants--Claimants, in addition to relying  
 15 on these statements, have invoked this morning the fact  
 16 that there was a criminal investigation, including of two  
 17 of their attorneys. But let's be clear that criminal  
 18 investigation was of 12 people, only two of whom are  
 19 associated with the Claimants, and it was for making false  
 20 representations as it relates to the remediation.  
 21 Two, even if Claimants' claim were otherwise  
 22 accurate, Ecuador's system of justice self-corrected when  
 23 the case was dismissed over the prosecutor's objections.  
 24 That is, it's the same court and courts that they now wind  
 25 up attacking.

06:24 1 Three, Claimants have never responded to  
 2 Ecuador's Annex B of Respondent's Track 2 Counter-Memorial  
 3 where we explained in detail the regularity of the  
 4 criminal justice system as it related to the criminal  
 5 prosecution.  
 6 And, four, whatever the Lago Agrio Plaintiffs'  
 7 motives may have been, there is nothing to impugn the  
 8 integrity of the Prosecutor General.  
 9 And, five, we will show you evidence of  
 10 contamination and ultimately of the false representations  
 11 as it related to the remediation.  
 12 We submit that this evidence--I'm sorry--we  
 13 submit that this case really--their denial-of-justice  
 14 claim really comes down at the end of the day to their  
 15 allegation of ghostwriting. There was approximately  
 16 year-and-a-half after this arbitration was commenced that  
 17 the Lago Agrio Judgment was issued. And, at that time,  
 18 Claimants, literally within hours, claimed that the  
 19 Plaintiffs ghostwrote that judgment. Having taken that  
 20 position immediately upon its issuance, Claimants then  
 21 sought to back up their claims, twisting and contorting  
 22 every piece available so it would fit their narrative.  
 23 And, in reality, I submit that's what this arbitration has  
 24 become.  
 25 Now, I will note at the outset that this Tribunal

06:26 1 is now in a far better position than Judge Kaplan ever was  
 2 to resolve the competing allegations. One, over our  
 3 protestations, Mr. Zambrano's hard drives are parts of  
 4 this record, and you will hear substantial testimony and  
 5 argument on that.  
 6 Two, the Plaintiffs' lawyers were parachuted in  
 7 to conduct that trial about a month, I think, maybe two  
 8 months before that trial. They didn't know the evidence.  
 9 They didn't even know that the evidence--that was in the  
 10 possession of their own clients.  
 11 Three, of course, Ecuador is a different party.  
 12 We don't have to defend and we are not defending the  
 13 conduct of the Plaintiffs, and I want to make that clear.  
 14 We're defending the conduct of the Republic of Ecuador.  
 15 We submit that the record here--and you'll see it over the  
 16 next few weeks--affirmatively establishes that the  
 17 Plaintiffs did not draft the Judgment, no matter what the  
 18 Claimants' evidentiary burden is. But in this instance,  
 19 of course, Claimants bear an exceedingly heavy burden in  
 20 proving State corruption by clear and convincing evidence  
 21 to leave no doubt in this Tribunal's mind.  
 22 And before I turn the floor over to my  
 23 colleagues, I wanted to address the issue of the presence  
 24 of Mr. Guerra.  
 25 When Claimants first introduced Mr. Guerra to this

06:27 1 Tribunal, it was with much fanfare. We know, because  
 2 Mr. Guerra testified to it, that Claimants' counsel worked  
 3 with him to prepare his successive declarations. Chevron  
 4 also included in its submission his forensic evidence; that  
 5 is, from his computers--bank records, shipping records, his  
 6 diary. He was to be their breakthrough witness, much like  
 7 Diego Borja was supposed to be their breakthrough witness  
 8 in 2009.  
 9 But a funny thing happened along the way. This  
 10 Tribunal wound up affording us time on the eve of the  
 11 Track 2 Hearing in January of 2014, and Claimants' evidence  
 12 is not what it has ever been made out to be. We will  
 13 explore that in depth over the next few days.  
 14 But for purposes here, it is sufficient to note  
 15 what Claimants and Mr. Guerra already admit: That  
 16 Claimants have paid him in financial benefits an inordinate  
 17 sum. \$18,000 in cash in Quito. \$10,000 for a 10-page  
 18 document. \$12,000 every month. Housing. A computer.  
 19 Hundreds of thousands, if not millions of dollars, in  
 20 payments for his lawyers, his immigration lawyer, the  
 21 immigration lawyer for his son. Criminal counsel. His own  
 22 personal counsel. Tax counsel.  
 23 And we have recently learned that Chevron has  
 24 agreed to pay all of his taxes and all of these financial  
 25 benefits for Tax Year 2013 and 2014. These tax payments

06:29 1 alone are likely to be in the hundreds of thousands of  
 2 dollars.  
 3 The Respondent moved to strike this Witness from  
 4 this Hearing candidly because we do not believe any witness  
 5 who gets paid gobs of money should be allowed to testify.  
 6 And we believe this not only because the Witness is  
 7 inherently unreliable, is inherently tainted, but because  
 8 the issue extends well beyond this little proceeding.  
 9 Allowing a witness to testify under such circumstances  
 10 suggests to lawyers everywhere that they can pay witnesses  
 11 whatever the justification. And I don't mean to get into a  
 12 dispute with Chevron over the ethics of this. To their  
 13 credit, they went out and they paid money to legal  
 14 ethicists who blessed this transaction. For us, it is a  
 15 bigger issue.  
 16 Nor is it sufficient, I would add, for the  
 17 Claimants to say that the payments to Mr. Guerra merely go  
 18 to the weight of the evidence, not to its admissibility.  
 19 Not when the Witness has been prepared 53 times as of a  
 20 year-and-a-half ago, four to six hours a day. Not where  
 21 his every statement has been choreographed, his every  
 22 facial expression has been choreographed, his every  
 23 mannerism has been choreographed.  
 24 At bottom, he is an admitted liar who is receiving  
 25 a substantial payment for his cooperation and who continues

06:31 1 to have every incentive to help his benefactor. Given the  
 2 Tribunal's determination to hear from him, we will, of  
 3 course, avail ourselves of our right of cross-examination,  
 4 but we do object to his presence for the reasons just  
 5 noted.

6 I will now turn the floor over to my colleague,  
 7 Mr. Ewing, who will now discuss the forensic evidence  
 8 before this Tribunal, and then we will conclude our  
 9 discussion of Claimants' denial-of-justice allegations with  
 10 my colleague Mr. Goldstein.

11 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you.

12 Mr. Ewing.

13 MR. EWING: As Mr. Bloom just indicated, I will be  
 14 taking a few minutes today to talk through what we have  
 15 found as a result of the forensic analysis of  
 16 Mr. Zambrano's hard drives. I'm going to start with the  
 17 objective facts that both Parties' Experts found and what  
 18 those facts tell us. And then I'm going to walk through  
 19 some of the speculative objections Claimants make to try to  
 20 avoid the import and muddy the meaning of those facts.

21 I think you will find throughout the next three  
 22 weeks that this dichotomy is a theme to what we will be  
 23 presenting to you. We have said in our pleadings numerous  
 24 times that Claimants' arguments do not match what their  
 25 Experts say or what the evidence shows. We have tried to

06:32 1 give you examples of that disparity over the last few  
 2 years but will now try to show you exactly what we mean.

3 And let me give you a quick example from this  
 4 morning.

5 Slide 44 from the Claimants purports to show that  
 6 forensic analysis of Guerra's computer indicates that  
 7 Guerra, the green pictures, has Draft Orders that were  
 8 last saved on Mr. Guerra's computer at the various points  
 9 of time. What they don't tell you is that Mr. Lynch's  
 10 Report actually found that Mr. Guerra doesn't have any of  
 11 these Draft Orders or there is no forensic evidence that  
 12 he has any of these Draft Orders until July 23rd, 2010,  
 13 approximately here in the timeline.

14 But let's jump to the specifics of this case. As  
 15 you know, we believe that the forensic analysis clearly  
 16 shows that the Lago Agrio Judgment was created on  
 17 Mr. Zambrano's computer when he took the bench at the  
 18 beginning of his second term, and the Judgment was edited  
 19 and saved hundreds of times on Mr. Zambrano's computer  
 20 between then and when it was issued on February 14, 2011.  
 21 And, as one would expect, for a document drafted over  
 22 almost five months, the snapshots we have of that document  
 23 during the drafting period have increasing amounts of  
 24 text. But let me show you what I mean, and not just tell  
 25 you.

06:34 1 Computer forensics allows us to piece together  
 2 some of the history of a file. Using forensics, we can  
 3 piece together information about when the Judgment file  
 4 was created, when, where, by whom it was completed and  
 5 submitted, and some information about what happened in  
 6 between.

7 The first place we can look is on Zambrano's  
 8 computers themselves. The filesystem, Microsoft Windows,  
 9 and Microsoft Word stored data about their files. It's  
 10 called metadata. And I will start with the filesystem  
 11 metadata.

12 This chart contains the filesystem metadata as  
 13 reported by Claimants' Expert Mr. Lynch. Document 15 on  
 14 this list is the file that contained the Lago Agrio  
 15 Judgment on Mr. Zambrano's computer. Incidentally, this  
 16 is the only place anywhere that anyone has found the Lago  
 17 Agrio Judgment before it was published. The rest of the  
 18 files here are snapshots recovered by Mr. Lynch of that  
 19 final Judgment. Each of these files is a snapshot of what  
 20 the Lago Agrio Judgment looked like at that moment.

21 Now, I've highlighted the create date. I've  
 22 highlighted the filesystem metadata for the Lago Agrio.  
 23 In this row, it should be on Document 15. This is the  
 24 date when this file, the Lago Agrio Judgment, was created:  
 25 October 11th--in the bottom right you'll see this--October

06:35 1 11th, 2010, at 7:46 p.m.

2 Before Document 15 on this list you will see we  
 3 have four earlier snapshots of the Judgment. We know when  
 4 these snapshots were taken based on their last written  
 5 dates. The first document, Document 12, has a last  
 6 written date of December 28th, 2010. And here is one of  
 7 the details I want to emphasize: The create date that we  
 8 were just looking at was set on October 11th, 2010, when  
 9 the Providencias.docx file was actually created for the  
 10 first time on Mr. Zambrano's computer. This snapshot of  
 11 Providencias.docx that we are looking at, Document 12, is  
 12 from December 28th, 2010. The point here is that some  
 13 metadata is set in a file when that file is created, and  
 14 it's generally never changed.

15 Now, as you'd expect, create date is one such  
 16 field. Last written date, on the other hand, is generally  
 17 updated every time a file is saved. So, for instance,  
 18 each time a Word document is saved, the last written date  
 19 is generally updated.

20 Now, I would like to jump over to the application  
 21 metadata. This is the metadata maintained by Microsoft  
 22 Word. This table from Mr. Lynch's Report is the  
 23 application data from the snapshots of Providencias.docx  
 24 as recovered by Mr. Lynch. If you look at this table, you  
 25 see it contains overlapping but slightly different

06:37 1 information. We now see the last saved by and author  
 2 names, for instance.  
 3 But first let's look at what's familiar or  
 4 similar: The file created field. You will see that the  
 5 first three snapshots all have a file created date of  
 6 October 11th, 2010, at 7:46 p.m. This is the same date we  
 7 saw with the earliest filesystem create date and confirms  
 8 that both the operating system and the application,  
 9 Microsoft Word, think that the Providencias.docx file was  
 10 created on Mr. Zambrano's computer on October 11th, 2010.  
 11 The next thing you will see here is the last  
 12 saved by date. These are the dates when these snapshots  
 13 were last saved. There are three key dates:  
 14 December 21st, December 28th, and March 4th. These are  
 15 the dates when these snapshots were last saved.  
 16 You will notice the December 28th date is the  
 17 same as from some of the filesystem metadata we saw  
 18 earlier, but that the December 21st date was not in the  
 19 filesystem metadata. And this is the second point I want  
 20 to make.  
 21 Forensic data is not always complete, so while we  
 22 can piece together the story, we don't have every single  
 23 detail.  
 24 Next, I want to point out the number of revisions  
 25 and edit time. The number of revisions, as you see in the

06:39 1 slide, is a counter of the number of times the document  
 2 was saved. So, based on the first line, we now know that  
 3 between October 11th, 2010, when the Providencias.docx  
 4 file was created, and December 21st, 2010, the Judgment  
 5 file was saved 286 times.  
 6 We can also do some math and calculate that  
 7 between December 21st and December 28th, the file was most  
 8 likely saved an additional 29 times.  
 9 Total edit time shows us that between October  
 10 11th and December 21st, 2010, the Judgment file was edited  
 11 for 2,107 minutes. As with revisions, we can do the math  
 12 and calculate that between December 21st and  
 13 December 28th, the file was most likely edited for an  
 14 additional 1,046 minutes.  
 15 In addition to looking at the metadata, Mr. Lynch  
 16 compared the text in each of these snapshots with the  
 17 final Lago Agrio Judgment. You can see in the far right  
 18 column on Mr. Lynch's table the percentages. This table  
 19 means that the December 21 snapshot of the Judgment has  
 20 42 percent of the text of the final Judgment, according to  
 21 Mr. Lynch's calculations. And the December 28th snapshot  
 22 has 66 percent. And that by March 4th, when the  
 23 Clarification Order was issued, Providencias document has  
 24 99 percent of the Judgment.  
 25 We will discuss this with Mr. Lynch next week,

06:40 1 but I submit to you that you will likely see that that  
 2 99 percent is substantively 100 percent, not 99 percent.  
 3 But like I said, we will take up Mr. Lynch's calculations  
 4 or percentages next week.  
 5 I would like to turn away from Zambrano's  
 6 computer forensics for a moment, and look at another data  
 7 point indicating that Mr. Zambrano wrote the Judgment.  
 8 Mr. Lynch says that "there is no evidence that the  
 9 Ecuadorian Judgment was uploaded from either of the  
 10 Zambrano computers."  
 11 But Mr. Lynch makes that assertion based on  
 12 incomplete information. Sometime before Mr. Zambrano's  
 13 second term in the Lago Agrio Case, the Ecuadorian  
 14 Judiciary Council started to implement a system whereby  
 15 the courts uploaded Orders to a database. We requested  
 16 all log entries from the SATJE system, the name of this  
 17 system. Claimants' counsel requested logs based on what  
 18 turned out to be incorrect assumptions. The information  
 19 you can see now is the most relevant information from the  
 20 complete SATJE logs for this case, of the Lago Agrio Case.  
 21 There are 32 columns. I have just shown you seven--or  
 22 six. The Exhibit 4 to Mr. Racich's March 16th, 2015  
 23 Report has the remainder if you would like to see them.  
 24 On the left, you can see the official date and  
 25 time of the Providencia and the log-in name for the person

06:42 1 who uploaded the Judgment. In this entry, it appears that  
 2 ZambranoN, presumably Nicolás Zambrano, uploaded the  
 3 Judgment. Next, you see the system date, which appears to  
 4 be the date and time when the log entry was created.  
 5 Here, it is February 14th, 2011, at 9:15 a.m.  
 6 Next is the last modification date, which is also  
 7 February 14th, 2011, at 9:15 a.m. And finally, you see  
 8 the machine from which the Judgment was uploaded, cnjs,  
 9 and a few other letters and numbers, which is  
 10 Mr. Zambrano's old computer. These two last entries are  
 11 the most important for this dating exercise as they show  
 12 that the Judgment was uploaded 38 minutes after it was  
 13 officially published in print.  
 14 So, now let's put all this together.  
 15 Judge Zambrano retook the bench in October 2010.  
 16 As we saw earlier, the Judgment file was created at about  
 17 the same time. The next snapshot we saw was  
 18 December 21st, and that snapshot contained 42 percent of  
 19 the Judgment, according to Mr. Lynch. The next snapshot  
 20 Mr. Lynch found was from December 28th, 2010, and it  
 21 contained 66 percent of the Judgment.  
 22 Now, we know that the Judgment was complete on  
 23 February 14th, 2011, because the Parties all received it  
 24 that day. But we also know that it was completed and  
 25 uploaded by Mr. Zambrano from his computer that same

06:43 1 morning from the SATJE logs. The presumption of  
 2 regularity, i.e., the presumption that the judge wrote the  
 3 Judgment as expected in the normal course, is fully  
 4 supported by the forensic data, and nothing more should  
 5 need be said.

6 Before I hand the floor to Mr. Goldstein, I want  
 7 to briefly address three of Claimants' arguments from this  
 8 morning that to them to prove that Zambrano did not write  
 9 the Judgment.

10 First, Claimants point out that we don't have a  
 11 stand-alone file dated February 14th, 2011, that contains  
 12 only the Judgment. Mr. Lynch has said that he thinks  
 13 Mr. Zambrano should have created a backup copy or should  
 14 have saved the final copy as a new final version of the  
 15 document. And I'm not here to comment on what best  
 16 practices are, and I do advise that everyone backs up  
 17 their data, but I don't think that that is what we are  
 18 here to judge.

19 What we should look at is Mr. Zambrano's past  
 20 practice, and we see that in another file he created for  
 21 this case, CasoTexaco.doc, in that file, Mr. Zambrano  
 22 seems to have all of the other Orders he drafted and  
 23 issued in this case from October 21st, 2009, until  
 24 February 18th, 2010. Ten of them. And again, that may  
 25 not be the way that Mr. Lynch would organize his files or

06:45 1 that I would organize my files, but that seems the way  
 2 Mr. Zambrano's work and organized his files. So, the fact  
 3 that the Providencias.docx has three Orders in it, the  
 4 final Judgment, a Procedural Order on February 21st, 2011,  
 5 and the March 4th, 2011, Clarification, is absolutely  
 6 consistent with Mr. Zambrano's practice.

7 But what does Mr. Zambrano's practice mean in  
 8 forensic context? It means that although Mr. Zambrano had  
 9 the complete Judgment on his computer on February 14th,  
 10 2011, as we can see from the SATJE logs, that when  
 11 Mr. Zambrano wrote the February 21st, 2011, order and then  
 12 the March 4th, 2011, Clarification Order in the same file,  
 13 he overwrote the last written dates in the metadata.

14 Second, Claimants point to the fact that Zambrano  
 15 had two computers--what we call, with the very technical  
 16 names, the old computer and the new computer. Claimants  
 17 then point to Mr. Zambrano's testimony at the RICO trial  
 18 that he wrote the Judgment on the new computer.

19 First off, we know that Mr. Zambrano didn't get  
 20 the new computer until December 7th, 2010, but that he  
 21 started work on the Judgment in October on the old  
 22 computer. But from Mr. Zambrano's perspective, he worked  
 23 on the Judgment for almost three months with Ms. Calva  
 24 using the old computer and he was using the new computer,  
 25 it is understandable that he would testify that he used

06:46 1 the new computer the whole time as it was the most recent  
 2 and longest computer that he used drafting the Judgment.

3 It cannot be a denial of justice that a judge  
 4 doesn't remember that he received a new computer partway  
 5 through his drafting process. Nor can it be a denial of  
 6 justice that Mr. Zambrano used the new computer to access  
 7 the old computer across the network, which we know that he  
 8 did. Or that he had Ms. Calva typing his dictations on  
 9 the old computer.

10 As with Mr. Zambrano's use of a single file to  
 11 write multiple different Providencias, I'm not here, and I  
 12 don't think any of us are here, to judge his working  
 13 style. That Mr. Zambrano prefers to dictate, a practice I  
 14 can't imagine despite Mr. Bloom's insistence that it is  
 15 much easier and preferable even to him, cannot be a denial  
 16 of justice. We will get into some of the more technical  
 17 differences next week as to why this new computer/old  
 18 computer distinction is a red herring, so I will leave  
 19 that for now.

20 Third, the Claimants make much hay over the speed  
 21 at which Mr. Zambrano typed the Judgment. Claimants point  
 22 to a one-week period where the Judgment increases at an  
 23 average rate of 17 pages per day, but neither Party  
 24 contests that Mr. Zambrano may have used his own notes to  
 25 type those pages. Yes, Claimants speculate that

06:48 1 Mr. Zambrano must have copied those pages from the Lago  
 2 Agrio Plaintiffs, but there is simply no forensic evidence  
 3 that this actually happened.

4 But maybe more importantly, I don't think we are  
 5 hear to judge Mr. Zambrano's typing speed either. Surely,  
 6 having a fast typist can't be a denial of justice. But  
 7 let's put this in perspective: Mr. Zambrano wrote a  
 8 188-page Judgment, single-space Judgment, in 126 days.

9 Judge Kaplan, Claimants' handpicked judge for the  
 10 RICO proceedings, wrote an 485-page Judgment and an  
 11 85-page Appendix--that's total of 570 pages--and he did  
 12 that in 98 days.

13 To make this comparison fair, let's double space  
 14 Mr. Zambrano's Judgment and make it--it's 376 pages.

15 So, over the almost five months that Mr. Zambrano  
 16 wrote, he averaged 2.98 pages per day. In contrast, over  
 17 the time Judge Kaplan was working, he averaged 5.8 pages  
 18 per day. If Mr. Zambrano's typing speed is a denial of  
 19 justice, then Judge Kaplan's is a double denial of  
 20 justice, if such a thing existed.

21 But you understand my point. Typing speed is not  
 22 a denial of justice. That is a summary of what we found  
 23 in our forensic analysis of Mr. Zambrano's computers. All  
 24 of the forensic evidence supports the presumption of  
 25 regularity. The forensic evidence supports the conclusion



06:49 1 that Mr. Zambrano wrote the Lago Agrio Judgment in the  
 2 normal course. After you have heard from the Experts on  
 3 these issues, we will revisit them in closing, but I  
 4 expect you will find what I have talked and walked you  
 5 through today to be true. I have now reached the end of  
 6 my allotted time and hand the floor to Mr. Goldstein.  
 7 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Before we proceed any further,  
 8 how much longer do the Respondents need? Because I think  
 9 you have run out of time.  
 10 MR. GOLDSTEIN: Mr. President, I anticipate under  
 11 20 minutes.  
 12 COURT REPORTER: Could we take a short break?  
 13 PRESIDENT VEEDER: I think we need a five-minute  
 14 break, and I think you need to reconsider your position.  
 15 You had four hours. That expired five minutes ago. If  
 16 it's 20 minutes for you, how many minutes after you?  
 17 MR. BLOOM: Mr. President, if I can address that,  
 18 he is the last presenter, so it's only 15 to 20 minutes to  
 19 go. I will note that in our last Hearing the Claimants had  
 20 gone on, I think it was, an extra 30 minutes--we can  
 21 check--we indulged them, although we then got a little bit  
 22 more at closing. So, it certainly asks for the same  
 23 courtesy that we extended the Claimants--  
 24 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Not for us. It's really, as  
 25 you well know, for the interpreters and the shorthand

06:50 1 writers. It's been a very, very long day, and we need to  
 2 finish the oral opening submissions today. It doesn't make  
 3 much sense to hold it over till tomorrow morning, and I  
 4 think we did count on both sides sticking to their four  
 5 hours. But we have got to have a break for the shorthand  
 6 writers. Let's have 15 minutes' break, and then we'll come  
 7 back and see where we stand.  
 8 (Brief recess.)  
 9 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Let's resume.  
 10 The Respondents have the floor, but let's be as  
 11 efficient as we can and get this long day finished as soon  
 12 as practical.  
 13 MR. GOLDSTEIN: Thank you.  
 14 Let's begin our final discussion of what remains  
 15 of Claimants' ghostwriting case by addressing the elephant  
 16 in the Claimants' living room. Despite their  
 17 unprecedented access to the Plaintiffs' attorneys' files,  
 18 despite pursuing tens of Section 1782 discovery actions,  
 19 and despite their unprecedented and purchased access to  
 20 Guerra and his documents, despite their immense resources,  
 21 Claimants have found no draft of the Lago Agrio Judgment  
 22 anywhere other than Judge Zambrano's computers. They  
 23 found no evidence that the Plaintiffs ever compiled the  
 24 draft judgment. They found no e-mail transmitting a draft  
 25 judgment from the Plaintiffs to the Court. Even alone,

07:05 1 but especially in contrast to the openness with which the  
 2 Plaintiffs' attorneys discussed their communications with  
 3 Mr. Cabrera, the utter lack of any evidence supporting  
 4 Claimants' ghostwriting charge is telling. There is no  
 5 evidence of ghostwriting because the Plaintiffs did not  
 6 ghostwrite the Judgment. And, in fact, there is  
 7 persuasive affirmative evidence that the Plaintiffs did  
 8 not ghostwrite Judgment.  
 9 Our discussion of this evidence has to begin with  
 10 e-mails that Claimants long ignored, contemporaneous  
 11 e-mails among the Plaintiffs' counsel in the months before  
 12 February 2011 indicating that they had absolutely no idea  
 13 when or in whose favor the Judgment would issue. I would  
 14 like to highlight just a few of them.  
 15 On December 17th, 2010, 56 days before the  
 16 Judgment issued, Pablo Fajardo explains to the rest of the  
 17 team "that the judge can issue a writ for judgment at any  
 18 time, any day." He stresses that the Plaintiffs must have  
 19 their legal argument ready because Judge Zambrano was  
 20 "very firm and exercises a great deal of authority."  
 21 This e-mail, by the way, in which Fajardo  
 22 characterized Judge Zambrano as firm and exercising a  
 23 great deal of authority is consistent with how even Guerra  
 24 says Zambrano first received Fajardo. He threw him out of  
 25 his office, "destroy[ing] him," "never talked" to him, and

07:06 1 never [even] gave him a chance."  
 2 By December 31, 2010, the Judgment still had not  
 3 issued, and Mr. Fajardo reached out again to Mr. Donziger,  
 4 saying that, "no one knows when the Judge may issue his  
 5 Judgment; he could do so within two weeks, or within many  
 6 months or even years." Here too no awareness as to when  
 7 the Judgment would actually issue; and, in fact, it did  
 8 not issue two weeks, many months or even years later.  
 9 Finally, on January 8th, 2011, after Chevron had  
 10 filed its alegato, its final brief, Mr. Fajardo sent two  
 11 further e-mails. He worried first that the judge "could  
 12 be convinced by Chevron's theory." He explained that "the  
 13 one who strikes first has greater success." The obvious  
 14 inference from these e-mails is that Fajardo's concerned  
 15 that Chevron would have an advantage with respect to the  
 16 Judgment because it filed its final brief first.  
 17 Claimants now parrot Judge Kaplan's speculation  
 18 in the RICO decision that these e-mails should not be  
 19 taken at face value but instead demonstrated a calculated  
 20 coverup. That speculation, in turn, is based on Judge  
 21 Kaplan's unprompted surmise that the e-mails before him  
 22 went to recipients, including U.S. lawyers from the  
 23 then-Patton Boggs law firm, who would not necessarily have  
 24 known about a judgment-ghostwriting scheme. Judge  
 25 Kaplan's conclusion was wrong, which is not entirely

07:08 1 surprising given that he reached it sua sponte.  
 2 For one thing, each e-mail that Claimant showed  
 3 you on their Slide 76 this morning was sent before the  
 4 Plaintiffs and Zambrano would have even agreed to a bribe,  
 5 according to Claimants' own case. Moreover, at least one  
 6 e-mail that neither Judge Kaplan nor Claimants address  
 7 included only people who would have known of a scheme if  
 8 there was one. On December 21, 2010, Fajardo e-mails  
 9 Donziger and Juan Pablo Sáenz reminding them that the  
 10 Plaintiffs must present the alegato. Obviously, Donziger  
 11 would have been complicit in any scheme.  
 12 And despite Claimants' implicit dismissal of  
 13 Sáenz as a junior rather than as a core member, to use  
 14 Judge Kaplan's words, of the Plaintiff's legal team, he  
 15 too would have known. After all, according to Claimants,  
 16 it was Sáenz's job to coordinate Plaintiffs' alleged  
 17 payments to Guerra during the same time period. They  
 18 trusted him.  
 19 Indeed, Claimants recognized that these e-mails  
 20 contradict their theory of a judgment-ghostwriting scheme.  
 21 For example, they included the December 31 and January 8th  
 22 e-mails that we just discussed on the so-called "judgment  
 23 fraud timeline" that they submitted to the RICO Court.  
 24 But after realizing that these e-mails, in fact,  
 25 undermined their case, Claimants removed them from the

07:09 1 timeline they submitted to this Tribunal. This is another  
 2 example of Claimants' preference for working backward from  
 3 their pre-determined conclusion, discarding along the way  
 4 evidence that undercuts that conclusion.  
 5 Between these e-mails and the forensics that my  
 6 colleague Mr. Ewing discussed, the affirmative  
 7 contemporaneous evidence contradicts Claimants'  
 8 ghostwriting narrative. So, where does that leave the  
 9 Claimants' case?  
 10 Well, they have one expert, Professor McMenamin,  
 11 who claims to have analyzed the Judgment and concluded  
 12 that Judge Zambrano did not author it, but on what is that  
 13 opinion based? It's based on the same pseudoscience we  
 14 have seen before from an earlier expert of Claimants,  
 15 Professor Turrell. But whom did Professor Turrell accuse  
 16 as the likely ghostwriter? She accused an attorney who  
 17 later went to work for one of Chevron's own law firms.  
 18 Unsurprisingly, we haven't heard from Professor Turrell  
 19 since. This too demonstrates Claimants' penchant for  
 20 simply ignoring unfavorable evidence.  
 21 Claimants also place much stock in what they  
 22 claim was Judge Zambrano's deliberately false testimony  
 23 during the RICO trial, as you heard this morning, and they  
 24 find it fundamentally important that Zambrano now works as  
 25 a contractor for a company of which Petroecuador owns

07:10 1 51 percent.  
 2 On this front, however, it is helpful to keep in  
 3 mind a few things about Judge Zambrano. He and his family  
 4 have not been relocated to the United States by a party to  
 5 this arbitration. His taxes are not being paid by a party  
 6 to this arbitration. And neither his RICO deposition nor  
 7 trial testimony were the result of preparation or coaching  
 8 by a party to this arbitration.  
 9 Judge Zambrano is not Guerra. He was a cold  
 10 witness whose recollections were not always correct but  
 11 whose mistakes such as testifying that he drafted the  
 12 entire Judgment on his new computer even though he began  
 13 drafting it before he received that computer were  
 14 understandable. This is particularly so, given that he  
 15 was asked about details from almost three years earlier.  
 16 Claimants are left, then, arguing that the  
 17 Judgment must have been ghostwritten because it contains  
 18 excerpts from the Plaintiffs' unfiled work product. In  
 19 other words, Claimants seek to persuade this Tribunal that  
 20 it should win this arbitration based on fewer than ten  
 21 pieces of evidence. There may be 100,000 or more pieces  
 22 of evidence out there. Claimants simply ignore the rest.  
 23 Moreover, Claimants' argument assumes without  
 24 proving that the Lago Agrio Record exists today in full  
 25 and is fully searchable such that one can definitively say

07:11 1 which documents are or are not in it. And it assumes  
 2 further that certain of the Plaintiffs' documents were  
 3 never lawfully filed with the Court, despite persuasive  
 4 contemporaneous evidence that they were. Both assumptions  
 5 are wrong.  
 6 To begin, it is undisputed that the Lago Agrio  
 7 Record, including the copy examined by Claimants' expert  
 8 Professor Juola, is incomplete. Examples of deficiencies  
 9 in the record abound. For example, on October 14th, 2010,  
 10 in less than an hour, Chevron filed 39 separate motions  
 11 challenging a single court order. This summary lists  
 12 them. Five days later, the Lago Agrio Court issued this  
 13 order addressing all 39 motions, yet only 35 of Chevron's  
 14 motions actually appear in the official record. As you  
 15 can see, Cuerdo 1989, ends with Chevron's 35th motion  
 16 filed at 5:44 p.m., and the next Cuerdo, 1990, begins with  
 17 the Court's Order addressing all 39 motions.  
 18 Claimants have failed to reconcile their claim to  
 19 have searched the entire record with this plain example of  
 20 documents that undisputedly were filed but yet cannot be  
 21 found in any copy of the record. The Republic has raised  
 22 this particular example in at least three filings with no  
 23 response from Claimants. Once again, we see them ignoring  
 24 unfavorable evidence.  
 25 Additionally, both Parties submitted many, many

07:13 1 documents along with CDs and DVDs at the various judicial  
 2 inspections. You will see examples of this over the  
 3 coming days in video recordings of some of these  
 4 inspections. Given the conditions under which those  
 5 inspections occurred, it is hardly surprising that some of  
 6 the evidence was not properly docketed.

7 I will pass over my next example of a record  
 8 deficiency in the interest of time and say that, finally,  
 9 we know of at least one instance in which a document was  
 10 misplaced initially but later found. The record contains  
 11 this acknowledgment by Court Secretary Lilibiana Suárez in  
 12 May of 2008, that she had just discovered a brief that was  
 13 filed six-and-a-half months earlier, in November of 2007.

14 Undoubtedly, there are more examples. These are  
 15 just some of the more obvious ones. It is quite  
 16 impossible under these circumstances for any person to  
 17 know the universe of the lawfully submitted documents, yet  
 18 Claimants press ahead with their pre-determined  
 19 conclusion, brushing aside any evidence calling into  
 20 question the basis for that conclusion.

21 As the Tribunal will recall, Claimants fought  
 22 viciously for the Lago Agrio Litigation to go forward in  
 23 Ecuador rather than in U.S. Federal Court in New York.  
 24 They won that battle, knowing that it would leave them  
 25 without an electronic docketing and filing system and with

07:14 1 courts unaccustomed to a case that would grow to be 2,000  
 2 times the size of the typical Ecuadorian lawsuit.  
 3 Claimants should not now be heard to complain about the  
 4 unsurprising reality that the length and complexity of the  
 5 Lago Agrio Litigation resulted in documents not being  
 6 properly docketed.

7 Nevertheless, the cornerstone of Claimants'  
 8 ghostwriting case remains their allegation that the  
 9 Judgment contains excerpts from the Plaintiffs' so-called  
 10 "unfiled work product." This is a classic example of the  
 11 conclusion-first approach. It tracks the following  
 12 premise: If a particular document did not turn up during  
 13 Claimants' partial review of the record, but some of its  
 14 text appears in the Judgment, then the Plaintiffs must  
 15 have ghostwritten the Judgment. Of course, this premise  
 16 is flawed given what we just discussed regarding the  
 17 incompleteness of the record itself.

18 And let's take a step back. Claimants' case is  
 19 premised on a presumption that defies common sense. It  
 20 presumes that the Plaintiffs would have drafted the  
 21 Judgment relying on documents that they knew were not in  
 22 the record. The reason this is nonsensical is that  
 23 Donziger was served with Chevron's Section 1782 discovery  
 24 subpoena on August 9 of 2010, as you can see on this  
 25 slide. This was a full six months before the Judgment

07:15 1 issued. Indeed, as you saw on Slide 74 this morning of  
 2 Claimants' opening presentation, Chevron had filed at  
 3 least five 1782 actions by October 2010.

4 So, the Claimants would have this Tribunal believe  
 5 that the Plaintiffs ghostwrote the Judgment during Judge  
 6 Zambrano's second term which began after Donziger and the  
 7 Plaintiffs were on notice that all of their documents would  
 8 be turned over to Chevron and, therefore, that the  
 9 Plaintiffs' use in a judgment of any unfiled documents  
 10 could easily be traced back to them.

11 In fact, the Plaintiffs knew specifically that  
 12 Chevron could and would make this connection, having  
 13 previously challenged Cabrera's use of the Plaintiffs'  
 14 allegedly unfiled work product before the Lago Agrio Court.  
 15 Yet, Claimants say Plaintiffs did so anyway with billions  
 16 on the line. Here, too, we see Claimants simply ignoring  
 17 context that undermines their theory.

18 To be clear, the Republic does not dispute the  
 19 text from some of the Plaintiffs' documents appears in the  
 20 Judgment as Claimants have identified. Rather, the dispute  
 21 is over whether Claimants have proved that these documents  
 22 were never filed with and, thus, not properly relied on by  
 23 the Lago Agrio Court. Claimants assuredly have not proved  
 24 this. Instead, they ignore persuasive evidence that these  
 25 documents were, in fact, filed. Let's look briefly at just

07:17 1 one of the documents in question: Fusion Memo.

2 The Tribunal will recall that the Fusion Memo  
 3 discusses Chevron's merger with Texaco. Not only did the  
 4 Plaintiffs argue the legal effect of that merger to the  
 5 Lago Agrio Court at the June 2008 judicial inspection at  
 6 Aguatico, but the oral argument tracks the Fusión Memo's  
 7 structure almost identically. This makes sense considering  
 8 that previous contemporaneous e-mail correspondence between  
 9 Plaintiffs' counsel reveals their intention to file the  
 10 memo and its accompanying exhibits at that judicial  
 11 inspection. Numerous pleadings discuss these e-mails. In  
 12 the interest of time I will not get into them here.

13 And, in fact, the Lago Agrio Record reflects the  
 14 submission of the memo's exhibits, as this page  
 15 demonstrates. It is, therefore, likely an administrative  
 16 error that the record also does not reflect the memo  
 17 itself. In fact, we know that the Court's docketing  
 18 process was rife with errors on the very day on which the  
 19 Fusión Memo's exhibits appear. Some pages, like this  
 20 middle one on this slide, are unnumbered. Other pages are  
 21 out of order, and mistakenly alternate with pages that  
 22 should have been appeared roughly 60,000 pages earlier. We  
 23 see the record jump on this slide from a page starting with  
 24 153,000 to one starting with 92,000 and then back up to  
 25 153,000.

07:18 1 In response, Claimants say, whatever the  
 2 Plaintiffs' original intentions, they must have changed  
 3 their minds. They decided not to file the Fusi3n Memo or  
 4 other documents. This is nothing more an attempt to wish  
 5 away unfavorable evidence.  
 6 Mr. President, Members of the Tribunal, we  
 7 respectfully submit that Claimants' assertion not only  
 8 fails to carry their burden of proof, but more  
 9 fundamentally it cannot be squared with the evidence.  
 10 There are no e-mails saying the Plaintiffs changed their  
 11 mind, and there is no further discussion amongst  
 12 Plaintiffs' counsel of these documents at all after the  
 13 dates on which they were most likely filed. To side with  
 14 Claimants, one would need to, as they do, assume the very  
 15 conclusion they have the burden of proving.  
 16 To be sure, Claimants have their theory of the  
 17 case, and they bob and weave through the evidence trying to  
 18 create a narrative that is not inconsistent with it. We  
 19 will show over the next several days that, despite those  
 20 efforts, Claimants' narrative is inconsistent with the  
 21 evidence. We will address many of Claimants' points and  
 22 contentions through witness examinations. We have not  
 23 tried to address them all in the limited time we have for  
 24 this opening presentation. For now, it suffices to say  
 25 that, even if Plaintiffs--Claimants were able to construct

CERTIFICATE OF REPORTER

I, David A. Kasdan, RDR-CRR, Court Reporter, do hereby certify that the foregoing proceedings were stenographically recorded by me and thereafter reduced to typewritten form by computer-assisted transcription under my direction and supervision; and that the foregoing transcript is a true and accurate record of the proceedings.

I further certify that I am neither counsel for, related to, nor employed by any of the parties to this action in this proceeding, nor financially or otherwise interested in the outcome of this litigation.

  
 DAVID A. KASDAN

07:20 1 a story not inconsistent with the evidence, that is not  
 2 tantamount to proving their case. It is speculation at  
 3 every turn. It ignores a wealth of evidence, and it  
 4 contorts other evidence, and it does not prove their case  
 5 even by a preponderance, much less does it carry their  
 6 substantially heavier burden.  
 7 Mr. President, Members of the Tribunal, thank you.  
 8 This concludes the Republic's opening presentation.  
 9 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thanks very much. We will  
 10 start again at 9:00 tomorrow.  
 11 We have certain housekeeping matters we need to  
 12 address at that time, but the first witness will be  
 13 Mr. Lynch. So, until tomorrow, we stand adjourned.  
 14 MR. BLOOM: May I just inquire, are we starting at  
 15 9 or 9:30? The Order said 9:30. Do you want to begin  
 16 earlier tomorrow?  
 17 PRESIDENT VEEDER: I think we should start at  
 18 9:00.  
 19 (Whereupon, at 7:20 p.m., the Hearing was  
 20 adjourned until 9:00 a.m. the following day.)  
 21  
 22  
 23  
 24  
 25